Graiṁéar na Gaeḋilge

leis na Bráiṫreaċaiḃ Críostaṁla.

SIGNUM FIDEI

1901.

Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

CAHILL & CO., Printers, Dublin.

PREFACE.

THE Grammar of Spoken Irish presents many difficulties owing to the forms peculiar to different places, but as the literary usage embraces the dialects current in different localities, save a few archaic survivals, the literary usage has been adopted as the standard of this grammar.

Modern Irish may be said to date from the end of the 16th, or the beginning of the 17th century. At the commencement of the modern period many forms are found which belong to an earlier period, and many forms which were even then growing obsolete, side by side with those by which they have since been replaced. We have deemed it advisable not to introduce into this grammar any obsolete grammatical forms, how prominent soever they may be in early modern literature, so that many forms and expressions found in other Irish grammars are omitted in the present work. Such as survive only within a small area are not given in the large type; on the other hand, those that are generally found in literature, and which are still in use in any one of the three Irish-speaking provinces, are given in preference to those more

generally used by Irish speakers, but which are not found in Irish literary works. It is hoped that this method may help to popularise modern Irish literature, and in some degree to reconcile the slight discrepancies which exist between the spoken and the literary usages.

In the present Grammar the letters ι, n, and ɲ are reckoned among the aspirable consonants, and ɼ is omitted from the eclipsable ones. The declension of verbal nouns is transferred from the third declension to the chapter on the verbs. A collection of heteroclite nouns is inserted. The usual declension of the personal pronouns is not employed, and the terms Conjunctive and Disjunctive pronouns are adopted. The naming of the four principal parts of an Irish verb, the treatment of the Indefinite form of conjugation, the rejection of compound prepositions, infinitive mood, and present participle form a few of the features of this grammar. In the appendices will be found lists of words belonging to the various declensions, of verbs of both conjugations, and of irregular verbal nouns.

Many of the rules have been taken from the "O'Growney Series" and from the "Gaelic Journal." The grammars of Neilson, O'Donovan, Bourke, Craig, and of many other authors, have been consulted. The chapter on the classification of the uses of the prepositions is based on

Dr. Atkinson's edition of Keating's Tpí bion-ġaoiṫe an ḃáip. Some of the sentences which illustrate the rules have been culled, with the author's permission, from the Mion-ċainṫ of the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P.

The Christian Brothers acknowledge with pleasure their indebtedness to Mr. John McNeill, B.A., for his generous and invaluable aid in the production of this grammar. To Mr. R. J. O'Mulrenin, M.A., to Mr. Shortall, and to many other friends their thanks are also due, and are hereby gratefully tendered.

CONTENTS.

CORRIGENDA.

Page 24 line 12 read tsléiḃ for tséliḃ.
,, 33 ,, 13 ,, an ,, in.
,, 34 ,, 8 ,, bíḋ ,, biḋ.
,, ,, ,, 12 ,, aontaiġe ,, aontuiġe
,, ,, ,, 25 ,, féiċ or féiġ ,, feiċ or feiġ.
,, 39 ,, 4 after cloinne insert "or clainne."
,, 42 ,, 11 nom. pl. fíona or fíonta.
,, 44 ,, 14 read ainmne, ainmneaċa for ainme, ainmeaċa.
,, ,, ,, 17 ,, gníoṁ, gníoṁarṫa for gniom, gnioṁarṫa.
,, ,, ,, 18 ,, compact or covenant instead of league.
,, ,, ,, 23 after codċa insert "or codana."
,, 45 ,, 22 ,, aiḋe ,, "or aí."
,, 47 ,, 1 read níḋ for niḋ.
,, 50 ,, 15 insert "originally" after "referring."
,, 52 ,, 2 read "féiċeaṁ, &c., or feiċeaṁ."
,, ,, ,, 10 after "not" insert "often."
,, ,, 14 insert the Munster form tig in nom. acc. & dat. sing.
,, 55 ,, 7 after ceoċa insert ceoḋana.
,, 67 ,, 9 read "worse" for "worst."
,, 71 ,, 12 & 13 read ṁíle ,, míle.
,, 73 ,, 13 read "especially" for "only."
,, 126 ,, 24 ,, léig ,, leig.
,, 143 ,, 6 ,, ġeiḃeann sé or ġeiḃ sé.
,, 154 ,, 14 ,, Verbal for Verbai.
,, 157 ,, 19 insert:—"In spoken language ba ḋóbair is used instead of ḋ' fóbair."
,, 165 ,, 28 read tuille for tulle.
,, 232 ,, 20 ,, nḋóġaḋ for nḋógaḋ.

PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.

CHAPTER I.

The Letters.

1. The Irish alphabet contains eighteen letters, five of which are vowels, the remaining thirteen are consonants.

The vowels are a, e, i, o, u; and the consonants are b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t.

2. The vowels are divided into two classes.

(1) The **broad** vowels: a, o, u.
(2) The **slender** vowels: e, i.

The vowels may be either long or short. The long vowels are marked by means of an acute accent (′) placed over the vowel, as mór (big) pronounced like the English word *more*; a short vowel has no accent, as mol (praise), pronounced like *mul* in the English word *mulberry*. Carefully distinguish between the terms "broad vowel" and "long vowel." The broad vowels (a, o, u) are not always long vowels, neither are the slender vowels (e, i) always short.

In writing Irish we must be careful to mark the accents on long vowels. See words distinguished by accent, par. 14.

3. Sounds of the Vowels.

The Irish vowel	is sounded like	in the words
á long	au	naught
		as in bád (baudh), boat
a short	o	not
		,, glas (gloss), green
é long	ae	Gaelic
		,, cré (kĭr-aé), clay
e short	e	let
		,, te (t'ye), hot
í	ee	feel
		,, máilín (mawil-een), little bag
i	i	hit
		,, fir (fir), men
ó	ō	note
		,, mór (mōr), big, large
o	ŏ, ŭ	dŏne or mŭch
		,, doras (dhur-us), a door
ú	oo	tool
		,, glún (gloon), a knee
u	u	bull or put
		,, ursa (ursu), a door-jamb

A short vowel at the end of an Irish word ***is always pronounced.***

The Diphthongs.

4. The following list gives the sounds of the diphthongs in Modern Irish. The first five are always long and require no accent. The others are sometimes long and sometimes short, hence the accent ought not to be omitted.*

---

* Since but few words, and these well-known, have eo short it is not usual to write the accent on eo long.

ia is pronounced like ee-a as Dia (dyee-a), God.

ua	,,	oo-a	,,	fuar (foo-ar), cold.
eu or éa	,,	ae	,,	feur (faer), grass.
ae	,,	ae	,,	laeṫe (lae-hĕ), days.
ao	,,	ae	,,	daor (dhaer), dear.
eó	,,	yó	,,	ceol (k-yōl), music.
iú	,,	ew	,,	fiú (few), worthy.
ái	,,	au+ĭ	,,	cáin (kau-ĭn), a tax.
éi	,,	ae+ĭ	,,	léim (lyae-ĭm), a leap.
ói	,,	ō+ĭ	,,	móin (mō-in), a bog.
úi	,,	oo+ĭ	,,	súil (soo-ĭl), an eye.
eá	,,	aa	,,	caisleán (kosh-laan*), a castle.
ío	,,	ee	,,	fíor (feer), true.
ai } ea }	,,	a	,,	aimsir (am-shir), weather. fear (far), a man.
ei	,,	e	,,	eile (el-ĕ), other.
oi	,,	ŭ+i	,,	toil (thŭ-il), a will.
io } ui }	,,	i	,,	fios (fiss), knowledge. uisge (ish-ge), water.
eo	,,	ŭ	,,	deoċ (d'yukh), a drink.

Triphthongs.

5. There are six triphthongs in Irish. They are pronounced as follows:—

aoi	=	ee	saoi (see)=a wise man.
eoi	=	ō+ĭ	dreoilín (d'rō-il-een)=a wren.

* Also pronounced kosh-laun.

eái	=	aa+ĭ	caisleáin (kosh-laain)=castles.
iai*	=	eea+ĭ	liaig (lee-ĭh)=a physician.
uai†	=	oo+ĭ	fuair (foo-ĭr)=found.
iui	=	ew+i	ciuin (kew-ĭn)=calm.

The Consonants.

6. The consonants are usually divided into two classes.

(1) The liquids—l, m, n, r.

(2) The mutes—b, c, d, f, g, p, s, t.

The letter h is not given, for h is not usually recognised as an Irish letter. It can be used only at the beginning of a word, and then merely to separate two vowel sounds.

Some grammarians divide the consonants into labials, dentals, palatals, gutturals, sibilants, &c., according to the organs employed in producing the sound.

7. Every Irish consonant has two natural ‡ sounds, according as it is *broad* or *slender*.

An Irish consonant is broad whenever it immediately precedes or follows a broad vowel (a, o, u). An Irish consonant is slender whenever it immediately precedes or follows a slender vowel (e, i).

8. The Irish consonants, when broad, have a much

---

* Pronounced like ille in the French word fille.

† It cannot be properly represented by any English sound. It is somewhat like *oue* in the French word ouest.

‡ Other sounds will be treated of under the heading "Aspiration."

thicker sound than in English; e.g. ꝺ broad has nearly the sound of *th* in thy, i.e. *d*+*h*; ꞇ broad has nearly the sound of *th* in threw, &c. When slender the Irish consonants (except ꞃ) have somewhat the same sound as in English; but when they are followed by a slender vowel, they are pronounced somewhat like the corresponding English consonant followed immediately by a *y*, e.g. ceol (music) is pronounced k' yōl; beo (alive)=b'yō.

It must not, however, be understood that there is a "*y* sound" in the Irish consonant. The peculiar sound of the Irish consonants when followed by a slender vowel is fairly well represented by the corresponding English consonant+an English "*y* sound." In some parts of the country this "*y* sound" is not heard. The *y* is *only suggestive.*

Combination of the Consonants.

9. There are certain Irish consonants which, when they come together in the same word, do not coalesce, so that when they are uttered a very short obscure vowel sound is heard between them.

This generally occurs in the case of two liquids or a liquid and a mute. Thus balḃ (dumb) is pronounced boll-ŭv; leanḃ (a child) is lyan-ŭv; ꝺoꞃċa (dark) is dhur-ŭchŭ; maꞃᵹaꝺ (a market) is mor-ŭgu.

The following combinations do not coalesce: cn, lḃ, lᵹ, lm, ꞃb, ꞃḃ, ꞃᵹ, ꞃn, lṁ, nḃ, nṁ, ꞃṁ, nċ, ꞃċ.

10. In some combinations, *one of the consonants is silent.*

ꝺl is pronounced like ll
ꝺn ,, nn
nꝺ ,, nn
ln ,, ll

Thus, coꝺlaḋ (sleep) is pronounced kullŭ.

ceuꝺna (same) ,, kaenŭ.
ᵹɼánꝺa (ugly) ,, graun-ŭ.
áilne (beauty) ,, aul-yĕ.

Notice the difference between nᵹ and ᵹn.

lonᵹ (a ship) is pronounced lŭng.
ᵹnō (work) ,, gŭn-ō.

11. Only three of the Irish consonants, viz. the liquids l, n, ɼ, may be doubled. This doubling can take place only at the end or the middle of words, but never at the beginning. The double liquids have quite distinct sounds from the single, except in Munster, where, in some positions, double liquids influence vowels. This doubling at the end of a word does not denote shortness of the preceding vowel, as in English: in fact, it is quite the opposite; e. g. ea in ꝼeaɼɼ (better) is longer than ea in ꝼeaɼ (a man).

In Irish there is no double consonant like the English *x*, which=*ks*.

Accent.

12. The only accent sign used in writing Irish is the acute accent placed over the long vowels, and over

míl (gen. case of míol), an animal.	mil, honey.
ná, than, not (imperative)	na, the plural article.
té, a person.	te, hot, warm.
dár, (do + a + ro).	dar, by (in swearing).
tásg, a report, rumour.	tasg, a task.
séan (seun), happy.	sean, old.
méar (meur), a finger.	mear, quick, active.
fír (gen. of fíor), true.	fir (gen. of fear), a man.
cúige,* a province.	ċuige, towards him.
súl (gen. plural súil), eye.	sul, before (with verbs).
í, she, her.	i, in.
cás, a case.	cas, turn.
cóiste, a coach.	coiste, a jury.
cá, where.	ca, what (interrog. adj.).
fíona (gen. of fíon), wine.	fiona, hair (of an animal).
sál, a heel.	sal, filth, dirt.
léar, clear, perceptible.	lear, the sea.
bás, death.	bas (or bos), palm of the hand.

* Also spelled cúigeaḋ: really means one-fifth. Formerly there were five provinces in Ireland.

CHAPTER II.

Aspiration.

15. The word "aspiration" comes from the Latin verb "aspirare," to breathe; hence, when we say in Irish that a consonant is aspirated, we mean that the breath is not completely stopped in the formation of the consonant, but rather that the consonant sound is breathed.

Take, for example, the consonant b. To form this consonant sound the lips are pressed closely together for an instant, and the breath is forced out on separating the lips. Now, if we wish to get the sound of b aspirated (or ḃ), we must breathe the whole time whilst trying to form the sound of b; *i.e.* we must not close the lips entirely, and the resulting sound is like the English consonant *v*. Hence we say that the sound of ḃ (in some positions) is *v*.

The Irish letter c corresponds very much to the English *k*, and the breathed sound of *k* corresponds to the sound of ċ (when broad). To sound the English *k*, we press the centre of the tongue against the palate, and cut off the breath completely for an instant. In pronouncing ċ (when broad), all we have to do is to try to pronounce the letter *k* without *pressing* the tongue against the palate. The word loċ, a lake, is pronounced somewhat like *luk*; but the tongue is not to touch the palate to form the *k*. The sound of ċ aspirated when slender (especially when initial) is very well represented by the sound of "h" in "humane."

The Irish *g* (ᵹ) has always the hard sound of *g* in the English word "go." In pronouncing this word we press the back of the tongue against the back of the palate. Now, to pronounce ᵹ̇ (and also ḋ) when broad, we must breathe in forming the sound of *g*, *i.e.* we must keep the tongue almost flat in the mouth.

The various sounds of the aspirated consonants are not given, as they are dealt with very fully in the second part of the "O'Growney Series." It may be well to remark, however, that the sound of ṗ is like the sound of the Irish ꞅ, not the English *f*. The Irish ꞅ is sounded without the aid of the teeth.

16. Aspiration is usually marked by placing a dot over the consonant aspirated—thus, ḃ, ċ, ḋ. However, it is sometimes marked by an h after the consonant to be aspirated. This is the method usually adopted when Irish is written or printed in English characters.

17. In writing Irish only nine of the consonants, viz., b, c, d, f, g, m, p, s, and t, are aspirated; but in the spoken language all the consonants are aspirated.

The Aspiration of l, n, r.

18. The aspiration of the three letters l, n, r, is not marked by any sign in writing, as is the aspiration of the other consonants (ḃ or bh); but yet they are aspirated in the spoken language. An example will best illustrate this point. The student has already learned that the word leaḃar, a book, is pronounced lyou-ar. Mo, my, aspirates an ordinary consonant, as mo ḃó, my cow; but it also aspirates l, n, r, for mo leaḃar, my book, is pronounced mŭ low-ar (*i.e.* the sound of *y* after *l* disappears).

a leaḃar, his book,	is pronounced	ă low-ar.
a leaḃar, her book,	,,	ă lyou-ar.
a leaḃar, their book,	,,	ă lyow-ar.
a neart, his strength,	,,	ă narth.
a neart, her strength,	,,	ă nyarth.

&c., &c.

19. When l broad begins a word it has a much thicker sound than in English. In sounding the English *l* the point of the tongue touches the palate just above the teeth; but to get the thick sound of the Irish l we must press the tongue firmly against the upper teeth (or we may protrude it between the teeth). Now, when such an l is aspirated it loses this thick sound, and is pronounced just as the English *l*.

20. It is not easy to show by an example the aspirated sound of r; however, it is aspirated in the spoken language, and a slightly softer sound is produced.

Rules for Aspiration.

21. We give here only the principal rules. Others will be given as occasion will require.

(*a*) The possessive adjectives mo, my; do, thy; and a, his, aspirate the first consonant of the following word, as mo ḃó, my cow; do ṁáṫair, thy mother; a ċapall, his horse.

(*b*) **The article aspirates** a noun in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, and also in the genitive masculine singular: an ḃean, the woman; tá an ḟeoil gairt, the meat is salt; mac an ḟir, (the) son of the man.

This rule does not apply to the letter r. See par. 40 (*b*).

(*c*) In compound words the initial consonant of the second word is aspirated, except when the second word begins with d or t, and the first ends in one of the letters d, n, t, l, r. These five letters will be easily remembered, as they are the consonants of the word "*dentals*"; rean-ṁáṫair, a grandmother; caṫ-ḃárr, a helmet; leiṫ-ṗinginn, a halfpenny; but rean-duine, an old person; rean-teaċ, an old house.

(*d*) The interjection a, the sign of the vocative case, causes aspiration in nouns of both genders and both numbers: a ḟir, O man; a ṁná, O women; a Ṡeumair, O James.

(*e*) **An adjective is aspirated** when it agrees with a feminine noun in the nominative or accusative sin-

gular, or with a masculine noun in the genitive singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders; also in the nominative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant: as bó ḃán, a white cow; mac an ḟir ṁóir, (the) son of the big man; ó'n mnaoi ṁaiṫ, from the good woman; trí capaill ṁóra, three big horses.

(*f*) When a noun is immediately followed by an indefinite* noun in the genitive case, singular or plural, the initial of the noun in the genitive is usually subject to precisely the same rules as if it were the initial of an adjective: e. g. uḃ ċirce, a hen-egg (lit. an egg of a hen); uiḃe circe, of a hen-egg; cloċ ṁine, a stone of meal; min ċoirce, oaten meal. The letters d and t are not aspirated after d, n, t, l, s; and f is often excepted, as the change in sound is so great.

(*g*) The initial of **a verb is aspirated**—(1) in the imperfect, the simple past, and the conditional, active voice; (2) after the particles ní, not; má, if; mar, as; and sul, before; (3) after the simple relative particle, expressed or understood: ḃí sé, he was; do ṡeas sí, she stood; ní ḟuilim, I am not; ní ḃeiḋ sé, he will not be; an té ḃuaileas or an té a ḃuaileas, he (or the person) who strikes; do ḃuailfinn, I would strike.

******i.e.* **One not preceded by the definite article, possessive adj., &c. See par. 585.**

(*h*) The initial of the word following ḃa or ḃuḋ (the past tense and conditional of the verb is) is usually aspirated.*

ḃa ṁaiṫ liom, I liked or I would like.

ḃ' ḟearr leis, he preferred or would prefer.

(*i*) The simple prepositions (except ag, ar, le, gan i, and go) aspirate the initials of the nouns immediately following them: fá ċloiċ, under a stone; ṫug sé an leaḃar do Ṡeumas, he gave the book to James.

CHAPTER III.

Eclipsis.

22. Eclipsis is the term used to denote the suppression of the sounds of certain Irish consonants by prefixing others produced by the same organ of speech.

There is usually a great similarity between the eclipsing letter and the letter eclipsed: thus, p is eclipsed by b; t is eclipsed by d, &c. If the student pronounce the letters p and b, t and d, he will immediately notice the similarity above referred to. Thus b and d are like p and t, except that they are pronounced with greater stress of the breath, or, more correctly, with greater vibration of the vocal chords.

* Except in N. Connaught and Ulster, where this rule applies only to b, p, m, and sometimes f.

23. Seven* of the consonants can be eclipsed, viz. ḃ, c, ꝺ, ꝼ, ᵹ, p, ꞇ; the others cannot. Each consonant has its own eclipsing letter, and it can be eclipsed by no other. The eclipsing letter is written immediately before the eclipsed letter, and is sometimes, though not usually in recent times, separated from it by a hyphen, as m-bάꞃꝺ or mbάꞃꝺ (pronounced maurdh).

In old Irish eclipsis was sometimes shown by doubling the eclipsed letter: thus, a ꞇꞇaꞃḃ, their bull. Whenever a letter is eclipsed both should be retained in writing, although only one of them (the eclipsing one) is sounded.

24. It is much better not to consider the letter ꞅ as an eclipsable letter at all. ꞇ replaces it in certain positions, but in none of those positions (dative singular excepted) in which the other letters are eclipsed. In fact, ꞅ is often replaced by ꞇ when the previous word ends in n, as an ꞇꞅúıl, the eye; aon ꞇꞅάl, one heel; ꞅean ꞇ-Sıle, old Sheelah; buıḋean ꞇꞅluaᵹ, a crowd, &c. Some, however, maintain that ꞅ is really eclipsed in these cases, because its sound is suppressed, and that of another consonant substituted; but as the substitution of ꞇ follows the rules for aspiration rather than those for eclipsis, we prefer to class ꞅ with the non-eclipsable letters, l, m, n, ꞃ, ꞅ.

---

*Eight is the number given in other grammars. They include the letter ꞅ.

25. ḃ is eclipsed by m.

c	,,	ᵹ.
ꝺ	,,	n.
ꝼ	,,	ḃ.
ᵹ	,,	nᵹ
p	,,	b.
ꞇ	,,	ꝺ.

ᴀ mḃáꞃꝺ (their poet) is pronounced		a maurd.
ᴀ ᵹcᴀpᴀll (their horse)	,,	a gŏpâl.
áꞃ nꝺán (our poem)	,,	aur naun.
i ḃꝼuil (in blood)	,,	ă vwil.
ᴀ nᵹiollᴀ (their servant)	,,	ang illŭ.
i bpéin (in pain)	,,	a baen.
ᴀ ꝺꞇᴀlᴀṁ (their land)	,,	a dhŏl-ŭv.

Although n is used as the eclipsing letter of ᵹ, the sound of n is not heard, but the simple consonant sound nᵹ; therefore it would be more correct to say that ᵹ is eclipsed by nᵹ.

Rules for Eclipsis.

26. (*a*) The possessive adjectives plural—áꞃ, our; ḃuꞃ, your; and ᴀ, their—eclipse the initial consonant of the next word, as áꞃ ꝺꞇiᵹeᴀꞃnᴀ, our Lord; ḃuꞃ ᵹcᴀpᴀll, your horse; ᴀ mḃáꝺ, their boat.

(*b*) The article eclipses the initial consonant of the noun in the genitive plural (both genders): láṁᴀ nᴀ ḃ-ꝼeᴀꞃ, (the) hands of the men.

(*c*) A simple preposition followed by the article and

a noun in the singular causes eclipsis*: tá sé ar an gcapall, he is on the horse; ṫáinig sé leis an ḃfear, he came with the man.

(*d*) The numeral adjectives seaċt, oċt, naoi, and deiċ (7, 8, 9, and 10), and their compounds, as 27, 28, 29, &c., cause eclipsis: seaċt mba, seven cows; oċt gcaoiriġ, eight sheep; seaċt ḃ-fir fiċead, twenty-seven men.

(*e*) The initial consonant of **a verb is eclipsed** after the particles a or an, whether; cá, where; naċ, whether . . . not or that . . . not; go, that; muna, unless; dá, if; and after the relative particle a when it is preceded by a preposition, or when it means "all that" or "what." The relative preceded by a preposition does not eclipse if the verb be past tense, except in the case of a very few verbs, which will be given later on: an dtuigeann tú, do you understand? naċ ḃfuil sé tinn, isn't he sick? cá ḃfuil sé, where is it? duḃairt sé go dtiocfaḋ sé, he said that he would come; an fear ag a ḃfuil an leaḃar,† the man who has the book.

The Insertion of n.

27. (*a*) When a word begins with a vowel, the letter n is usually prefixed in all those cases in which a con-

* In many places they prefer to aspirate in this case.

† In colloquial Irish this sentence would be, An fear a ḃ-fuil an leaḃar aige, or An fear go ḃ-fuil an leaḃar aige.

sonant would be eclipsed: e. g. ár n-arán laeteamail, our daily bread; ċuaiḋ Oisín go tír na n-óg, Oisin went to "the land of the young."

The n is sometimes omitted when the previous word ends in n: as ar an aonaċ, or ar an n-aonaċ, at the fair.

(*b*) Prepositions (except do and de) ending in a vowel prefix n to the possessive adjectives a, his, her, or their; and ár, our: le n-a ṁáṫair, with his mother; ó n-ár dtír, from our country.

Insertion of t.

28. (*a*) The article prefixes t to a masculine noun beginning with a vowel in the nominative and accusative singular: as an t-aṫair, the father.

(*b*) If a noun begins with s followed by a vowel, or by l, n, or r, the s is replaced by t after the article in the nom. and acc. feminine sing. and the genitive masculine, and frequently in the dative singular of both genders, as an tsúil, the eye; teaċ an tsagairt, (the) house of the priest, i. e. the priest's house; tá siad ag teaċt ó'n tsléiḃ, they are coming from the mountain.

(*c*) This replacing of s by t occurs after the words aon, one; sean, old; and other words ending in n, as aon tsealg, one hunt.

The Insertion of ɴ.

29. The following is a pretty general rule for the insertion of ɴ before vowels:—

"Particles which would neither aspirate nor eclipse, and which end in a vowel, prefix ɴ to words beginning with a vowel. Such is the case with the following:— le, with; a, her; go, to; dara, second; sé, six; trí, three; na, the (in the nom., acc., and dative plural, also in the gen. singular feminine); go before adverbs; &c."—*Gaelic Journal.*

CHAPTER IV.

Attenuation and Broadening.

30. *Attenuation* is the process of making a broad consonant slender. This is usually done by placing an i immediately *before* the broad consonant, or an e *after* it. Thus if we want to make the r of mór (big), slender, we place an i before the r; thus móir. If we wish to make the f of fad (the termination of the 1st person singular future) slender, we write fead, &c.

31. *Broadening* is the process of making a slender consonant broad. This is often done by placing a u immediately before the slender consonant, or an a after it; thus the verbal noun of derived verbs ending in iġ is formed by adding aḋ: before adding the aḋ the ġ must be made broad; this is done by inserting

a *u*; mínig, explain; míniugaḋ, explanation. If we want to make the f of fiḋ (the termination of 3rd singular future) broad, we must write faiḋ. Buailfiḋ sé, he will strike; meallfaiḋ sé, he will deceive.

Whenever a slender consonant is preceded by an i which forms part of a diphthong or a triphthong, the consonant is usually made broad by dropping the i. Thus to broaden the l in buail, or the n in goin, we drop the i and the we get bual and gon. The verbal nouns of buail and goin are bualaḋ and gonaḋ.

CHAPTER V.

Caol le caol agus leaṫan le leaṫan;

or,

Slender with slender and broad with broad.

32. If a consonant or any combination of consonants comes between two vowels, both the vowels must be slender, or else both must be broad. In Irish we could not have one vowel broad and the other slender; for instance, fearín is incorrect spelling. It should be firín, a little man.

The reason for this rule is simple. Whenever a consonant is beside a broad vowel it is broad, and when it is beside a slender vowel it is slender. The sounds of the consonants differ according as they are broad or slender; hence, if we were to write

ṗeaṗín, the ṗ, being beside a slender vowel (i), should have its slender sound; but being also beside a, a broad vowel, the ṗ should be broad. But a consonant could not be slender and broad at the same time; therefore such spelling as feapín, málín, and eunín, &c., is wrong. They should be spelled fipín, máilín, éinín.

There are a few apparent exceptions to the rule Caol le caol, viz. ané, yesterday; andiu, to-day; ariaṁ, ever (in past); aréir, last night; arís, again; aníos, up (from below); asteaċ, motion in; astiġ, rest inside; and a few others. All these words are either contractions or else two words which were formerly written separate, but now we often write them as above. The correct form of ané is i n-dé or a n-dé; of andiu is i n-diu; &c., &c.

CHAPTER VI.

Syncope.

33. Whenever, in a word of two or more syllables, an unaccented vowel or diphthong occurs in the last syllable between a liquid (l, m, n, r) and any other consonant, or between two liquids, the unaccented vowel or diphthong is elided whenever the word is lengthened by a grammatical inflection beginning with a vowel. This elision of one or more unaccented

(b) *Adjectives.*

The genitive singular feminine of—

saiḋḃir (rich)	is	saiḋḃre	not	saiḋḃire
flaiṫeaṁail (princely)	,,	flaiṫeaṁla	,,	flaiṫeaṁala
álainn (beautiful)	,,	áilne	,,	álainne
aoiḃinn (pleasant)	,,	aoiḃne	,,	aoiḃinne
uasal (noble)	,,	uaisle	,,	uasaile

(c) *Verbs.*

Root.	Pres. Indicative.		
codail	codlaim, I sleep,	not	codailim.
siuḃail	siuḃlaim, I walk,	,,	siuḃailim.
innis	innsim, I tell,	,,	innisim.
abair	abraim, I say,	,,	abairim.
laḃair	laḃraim, I speak,	,,	laḃairim.

The same contraction takes place in these and like verbs in all the finite tenses except the future and conditional (*old* forms). See par. 298.

A thorough knowledge of when and how Syncope takes place will obviate many difficulties.

PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.

36. There are nine parts of speech in Irish corresponding exactly to those in English.

CHAPTER I.

The Article.

37. In Irish there is only one article, ᴀn, which corresponds to the English definite article, "the."

There is no indefinite article, so that cᴀpᴀll means either "horse" or "a horse."

38. In all cases of the singular number the article has the form ᴀn, except in the genitive feminine, when it becomes nᴀ.

In all the cases of the plural it is nᴀ.

39. The article ᴀn had formerly an initial ꞅ. This ꞅ reappears after the following prepositions, ı, ın, or ᴀnn, in; ᵹo, to; le, with; ꞇꞃé, through. Although this ꞅ really belongs to the article, still it is usually written as part of the preposition; as ınꞅ ᴀn leᴀḃᴀꞃ, in the book; leıꞅ ᴀn ḃꞅeᴀꞃ, with the man.

INITIAL CHANGES PRODUCED BY THE ARTICLE.

Singular.

40. (*a*) If a noun begins with an aspirable consonant (except ꝺ, ꞇ, and ꞅ),* it is aspirated by the article

* The letters ꝺ, ꞇ, and ꞅ are aspirable in the singular, but not usually by the article.

in the nominative and accusative feminine and in the genitive masculine, as an ḃó, the cow; an ḃean, the woman; mac an ḟir, (the) son of the man; ceann an ċapaill, the horse's head (or the head of the horse).

(*b*) If a noun begins with s followed by a vowel, or by l, n, r, the s is replaced by t, in the nominative and accusative feminine and genitive masculine, and generally in the dative of both genders: an tsál, the heel; an tsúil, the eye; teaċ an tsagairt, the house of the priest; mac an tsaoir, the son of the artizan; ó'n tsagart, from the priest; ar an tsléiḃ, on the mountain.

Strictly speaking, it is only in the dat. fem. that the s is replaced by t, but custom permits it in the masculine.

(*c*) If a noun begins with a vowel, the article prefixes t to the nominative and accusative masculine, and h to the genitive feminine, as an t-aṫair, the father; an t-uisge, the water; an t-eun, the bird; an t-uan, the lamb; bárr na h-uiḃe, the top of the egg; fuaċt na h-aimsire, the coldness of the weather.

(*d*) When the noun begins with an eclipsable consonant (except d and t), the article generally eclipses when it is preceded by a preposition, as ar an gcnoc, on the hill; ó'n bfear, from the man. After the prepositions* do and de aspiration takes place, not

* For the effects of gan and the article, see Syntax, par. 606 (*b*).

eclipsis, as ṫug ſé an t-airgeaḋ do'n ḟear, he gave the money to the man; cuid de'n ḟeur, some of the grass.

(*e*) No change is produced by the article in the singular if the noun begins with d, n, t, l, ſ (followed by a mute), or r. In *Munster* d and t are often eclipsed in the dative.

Plural.

(*f*) If a noun begins with an eclipsable consonant the article eclipses it in the genitive plural, as a ḃean na dtrí mbó, O woman of (the) three cows; Sliaḃ na mban, "the mountain of the women."

(*g*) If the noun begins with a vowel the article prefixes n to the genitive plural and h to the nom., the acc., and dative plural, as luaċ na n-uḃ, the price of the eggs; na h-aſail, the asses; ó na h-áitiḃ ſo, from these places.

(*h*) The letter ſ is never replaced by t in the plural number.

CHAPTER II.

The Noun.

I. GENDER.

41. There are only two genders in Irish, the masculine and the feminine.

The gender of most Irish nouns may be learned by the application of a few general rules.

MASCULINE NOUNS.

42. (*a*) Names of males are masculine: as fear, a man; flaiṫ, a prince; aṫair, a father; coileaċ, a cock.

(*b*) The names of occupations, offices, &c., peculiar to men, are masculine: as ollaṁ, a doctor; file, a poet; bárd, a bard; breiṫeaṁ, a judge; saiġdiúir, a soldier.

(*c*) Personal agents ending in óir, aire, uiḋe (or aiḋe, oiḋe), or aċ are masculine: as sgeulaiḋe, a story-teller; bádóir, a boatman.

(*d*) Diminutives ending in án, and all abstract nouns ending in as or eas, are masculine—*e.g.*:

árdán, a hillock. maiṫeas, goodness.

(*e*) The diminutives ending in ín are usually said to be of the same gender as the noun from which they are derived. Notwithstanding this rule they seem to be all masculine. Cailín, a girl, is masculine,* i. e. it suffers the same initial changes as a masculine noun, *but the pronoun referring to it is feminine.* She is a fine girl=Is breáġ an cailín í (not é).

(*f*) Many nouns which end in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a broad vowel are masculine: as ball, a limb; luaċ, a price; crann, a tree, &c.

Exceptions:—(1) All words of two or more syllables ending in aċt or óg.

***Do not confound sex with gender. Gender is decided by grammatical usage only.**

(2) A large number of nouns ending in a broad consonant are feminine. A very full list of commonly used feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant will be found in Appendix II.

FEMININE NOUNS.

43. (*a*) Names of females and designations of females are feminine: bean, a woman; cearc, a hen; máthair, a mother; ingean, a daughter; buime, a nurse.

(*b*) The names of countries and rivers are feminine: as Éire, Ireland; an Life, the Liffey; an Bhearbha, the Barrow.

(*c*) Words of two or more syllables ending in acht or in óg are feminine: as fuiseóg, a lark; driseóg, a briar; milseacht, sweetness; leamhnacht, new-milk.

(*d*) All abstract nouns formed from the genitive singular feminine of adjectives are feminine: as áirde, height—from árd, high; áille, beauty—from álainn, beautiful; daille, blindness—from dall, blind.

(*e*) Nouns ending in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a slender vowel, are feminine: as tír, country; onóir, honour; uair, an hour; súil, an eye.

Exceptions:—(1) Personal nouns ending in óir. (2) Diminutives in ín. (3) Names of males, as athair, a father; buachaill, a boy. (4) Also the following nouns:—buaidh, a victory; druim, the back; ainm,* a name; greim, a piece; geit, a fright, a start; and foclóir, dictionary, vocabulary.

* Ainm is feminine in S. Munster.

II. CASE.

44. In Irish there are five cases—the Nominative, Accusative, Genitive, Dative, and Vocative.

The Nominative case in Irish corresponds to the English nominative when the subject of a verb.

The Accusative corresponds to the English objective case when governed by a transitive verb. The accusative case of every noun in modern Irish has the same form as the nominative, and suffers the same initial changes as regards aspiration and eclipsis.

The Genitive case corresponds to the English possessive case. English nouns in the possessive case or in the objective case, preceded by the preposition "of" (when equivalent to the possessive), are usually translated into Irish by the genitive case.

The Dative case is the case governed by prepositions.

The Vocative corresponds to the English nominative of address. It is always used in addressing a person or persons. It is preceded by the sign ᴀ, although "O" may not appear before the English word; but this ᴀ is not usually pronounced before a vowel or ḟ.

RULES FOR THE FORMATION OF THE CASES.

N.B.—These rules apply to all the declensions.

45. The **Nominative case singular** is always the simple form of the noun.

46. The **Dative case singular** is the same as the nominative singular, except (1) in the 2nd declension, when the noun ends in a broad consonant; (2) in most of the nouns of the 5th declension.

47. The **Vocative case singular** is always the same as the nominative singular, except in the 1st declension, in which it is like the genitive singular.

48. Whenever the nominative plural is formed by the addition of ᴛe, ᴛᴀ, ᴀnnᴀ, ᴀċᴀ, ı or ıḋe, &c., it is called a **strong nominative plural.** Strong plurals are usually found with nouns whose nominative singular ends in a liquid.

Those ending in ʟ or n generally take ᴛᴀ or ᴛe.

,,	m or ꞃ	,,	ᴀnnᴀ.
,,	ṅ	,,	ᴀċᴀ.

The Genitive Plural.

49. (1) The genitive plural in the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd declensions is like the nominative singular, except strong plurals, and a few nouns which drop the ı of the nominative singular, as ꞅúıʟ, an eye, gen. pl. ꞅúʟ.

(2) In the 4th declension, and in the case of nearly all strong plurals, the genitive plural is like the nominative plural.

(3) In the 5th declension the genitive plural is like the genitive singular.

50. The Dative Plural.

(1) When the nominative plural ends in ᴀ or a consonant, the dative plural ends in ᴀıƀ.

(2) When the nominative plural ends in e, the dative plural is formed by changing the e into ıƀ.

(3) When the nominative plural ends in í, the dative plural is formed by adding ƀ.

N.B.—The dative plural always ends in ᴀıƀ, ıƀ, or íƀ.

Vocative Plural.

51. (1) When the dative plural ends in ᴀıƀ, the vocative plural is formed by dropping the ıƀ of the dative.

(2) In all other cases it is like the nominative plural.

III. The Declensions.

52. The number of declensions is not quite settled: it is very much a matter of convenience. Five is the number usually reckoned.

The declensions are known by the inflection of the genitive singular.

THE FIRST DECLENSION.

53. All the nouns of the first declension are masculine, and end in a broad consonant.

All masculine nouns ending in a broad consonant *are not* of the first declension.

54. The genitive singular is formed by attenuating the nominative. In most nouns of the 1st declension this is done by simply placing an ı after the last broad vowel of the nominative.

Example.

55. maor, a steward.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	maor	maoir
Gen.	maoir	maor
Dat.	maor	maoraibh
Voc.	a mhaoir	a mhaora

56. In words of more than one syllable, if the nominative ends in ach or each, the genitive singular is formed by changing ach or each into aigh or igh respectively. With a few exceptions, the nominative plural of these nouns is like the genitive singular. The other cases are quite regular.

In monosyllables ch is not changed into gh; as bruach, a brink, gen. bruaich.

N.B.—In all the declensions in words of more than one syllable ach and each, when attenuated, become aigh and igh; and aigh and igh when made broad become ach and each. See dat. pl. of marcach and coileach.

Examples.

57. marcach, a horseman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	marcach	marcaigh
Gen.	marcaigh	marcach
Dat.	marcach	marcachaibh
Voc.	a mharcaigh	a mharcacha

N.B.—The majority of nouns in ach belonging to this declension are declined like marcach.

58. ualaċ, a load, burden.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	ualaċ	ualaiġe
Gen.	ualaiġ	ualaċ
Dat.	ualaċ	ualaiġiḃ
Voc.	a ualaiġ	a ualaiġe

mullaċ, a summit; eudaċ, cloth; bealaċ, a path, a way; órlaċ, an inch; and aonaċ, a fair, are declined like ualaċ. Aonaċ has nom. pl. aonaiġe or aontuiġe.

59. coileaċ, a cock.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	coileaċ	coiliġ
Gen.	coiliġ	coileaċ
Dat.	coileaċ	coileaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċoiliġ	a ċoileaċa

60. Besides the above simple method of forming the genitive singular of most nouns of this declension, there are also the following modifications of the vowels of the nominative singular:—

Change eu or éa in nom. sing. into éi in gen. sing.

,,	ia	,,	,, éi	,,
,,	o (short)	,,	,, ui	,,
io or ea		,, usually	,, i	,,

All the other cases of these nouns are formed in accordance with the rules given above.

Examples of Vowel-changes in Genitive Singular.

61. eun, a bird.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	eun	éin
Gen.	éin	eun
Dat.	eun	eunaiḃ
Voc.	a éin	a euna

62. fear, a man.

Nom. & Acc.	fear	fir
Gen.	fir	fear
Dat.	fear	fearaiḃ
Voc.	a ḟir	a ḟeara

N.B.—The gen. of oileán an island is oileáin; of féar, grass, féir; and of fear, a man, fir.

63. Cnoc, a hill.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnoc	cnuic
Gen.	cnuic	cnoc
Dat.	cnoc	cnocaiḃ
Voc.	a ċnuic	a ċnoca

64. The following nouns change ea into ei in genitive singular:—Leanḃ, a child; neart, strength; cneas, skin; and ceart, right, justice. (Cnis and cirt are sometimes found as the genitives of cneas and ceart).

Irregular Genitives Singular.

mac, a son,	has	genitive	mic
biaḋ, food,	,,	,,	bíḋ
rian, a track,	,,	,,	riain
srian, a bridle,	,,	,,	sriain
Brian, Bernard, Brian,		,,	Briain

Neaċ, a person; and aoinneaċ (or aoin'ne), anybody, are indeclinable.

65. Some nouns of this declension form their nominative plural by adding e.

NOUN.	GENITIVE SING.	NOM. PLURAL.
aonaċ, a fair	aonaiġ	aontaiġe / aonaiġe
doras, a door	dorais	doirse
éigeas, a learned man	éigis	éigse
aingeal, an angel	aingil	aingle
bóṫar, a road	bóṫair	bóiṫre
madaḋ or madraḋ, a dog	madraiḋ	madraiḋe
slabraḋ, a chain	slabraiḋ	slabraiḋe
margaḋ, a market	margaiḋ	margaiḋe

66. The following nouns take a in nominative plural:—peann, a pen; seod, a jewel: slán, a surety: cneas, skin: meacan, a carrot or parsnip; deor, a tear; caor, a berry; smeur, a blackberry; uball, an apple (pl. ubla); focal (pl. focail or focla); fiaċ,* a debt (fiaċ, pl. féiċ or féiġ, a raven); sgeul, news; and bruaċ, a brink.

* This word is usually used in the plural; as ní ḟuil aon ḟiaċa orm, I am not in debt.

67. The following take ʈa, in nom. pl. ꞅeol, a sail; ceol, music; neul, a cloud; ꞅꝣeul, a story; coꝣaḋ, war (pl. coꝣċa*); cuan, a harbour; ꝺún, a fort (pl. ꝺúnʈa and ꝺúna); ceuꝺ, a hundred†; líon, a net; ceap, a trunk of a tree (pl. ceapċa); múꞃ (pl. múꞃċa), a wall.

68. Other nominative plurals—cláꞃ, a board, a table, makes cláiꞃ or cláꞃaċa; ʈobaꞃ, a well, makes ʈobaiꞃ or ʈobꞃaċa, ʈobaiꞃeaċa or ʈoibꞃeaċa: ꞅluaꝣ, a crowd, makes ꞅluaiꝣʈe.

69. Many nouns of this declension have two or more forms in the nominative plural. The regular plural is the better one, though the others are also used. The following are a few examples of such nouns:—ꝼeaꞃ, a man (pl. ꝼiꞃ, ꝼeaꞃa); mac, a son (pl. mic, maca); leaḃaꞃ, a book (leaḃaiꞃ, leaḃꞃa); aꞃm, an army (pl. aiꞃm, aꞃma); capall, a horse (pl. capaill, caiple).

70. The termination ꞃaiḋ or ꞃiḋ has a collective, not a plural, force; just like *ry* in the English words cavalry, infantry, &c.; hence laoċꞃaiḋ, a band of warriors; macꞃaiḋ, a company of youths; eaċꞃaiḋ, a number of steeds (or cavalry), are not really plurals of laoċ, mac and eaċ, but are collective nouns formed from them. Likewise the word eunlaiṫ, birds, is a collective noun, not the plural of eun.

Appendix I. gives a list of nouns belonging to this declension.

---

* coꝣaiḋe is also used. † When used as a noun.

THE SECOND DECLENSION.

71. All nouns of the 2nd declension are **feminine.*** They all end in consonants, but the consonants may be either broad or slender.

72. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding e, (if the last vowel of the nominative be broad it must be attenuated); and if the last consonant be ċ it is changed into ᵹ in the genitive (except in words of one syllable).

73. The **dative singular** is got by dropping the final e of the genitive.

74. The **nominative plural** is formed by adding ᴀ or e (ᴀ, if final consonant be broad) to the nom. sing.

Examples.

75. lil, a lily.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	lil	lile
Gen.	lile	lil
Dat.	lil	lilib
Voc.	ᴀ lil	ᴀ lile

76. cor, a foot† or a leg.

Nom. & Acc.	cor	corᴀ
Gen.	coire	cor
Dat.	coir	corᴀib
Voc.	ᴀ ċor	ᴀ ċorᴀ

* ᴛeᴀċ and rliᴀb, two masculine nouns, are sometimes given with the second declension. We give them as irregular nouns (par. 132).

† A foot in measurement is ᴛroiᵹ, pl. ᴛroiᵹᴛe.

77. cailleaċ, a hag.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cailleaċ	cailleaċa
Gen.	caillige	cailleaċ
Dat.	cailliġ	cailleaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċailleaċ	a ċailleaċa

78. Like nouns of 1st declension, the vowels of the nom. sing. are sometimes changed when the final consonant is attenuated in the genitive singular.

The following are the chief changes :—

Change	io	in the nom. sing.	into	i	in the gen. sing.
,,	eu	,,	,,	éi	,,
,,	ia	,,	,,	éi	,,
,,	o (short)	sometimes	,,	ui	,,

In words of one syllable change ea into ei (but cearc, a hen, becomes circe); in words of more than one syllable change ea into i.

79. beaċ, a bee.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	beaċ	beaċa
Gen.	beiċe	beaċ
Dat.	beiċ	beaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ḃeaċ	a ḃeaċa

80. geug, a branch.

Nom. & Acc.	geug	geuga
Gen.	géige	geug
Dat.	géig	geugaiḃ
Voc.	a ġeug	a ġeuga

81. grian, a sun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	grian	griana
Gen.	gréine	grian
Dat.	gréin	grianaib
Voc.	a ġrian	a ġriana

82. long, a ship.

Nom. & Acc.	long	longa
Gen.	luinge	long
Dat.	luing	longaib
Voc.	a long	a longa

83. freuṁ,* a root.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	freuṁ	freuṁa (or freuṁaċa)
Gen.	fréiṁe	freuṁ (freuṁaċa)
Dat.	fréiṁ	freuṁaib (freuṁaċaib)
Voc.	a ḟreuṁ	a ḟreuṁa (a ḟreuṁaċa)

84. áit, a place.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	áit	áite, áiteanna or áiteaċa
Gen.	áite	áit, áiteanna ,, áiteaċa
Dat.	áit	áitib, áiteannaib, áiteaċaib
Voc.	a áit	a áite, áiteanna, áiteaċa

The above are two examples of nouns with strong nominative plural (see par. 48).

85. In forming the genitive, nouns are sometimes

*Also spelled preuṁ in Munster.

syncopated, as buiḋean, a company, gen. buiḋne (see pars. 33, 35); bruiḋean, a palace, gen. sing. bruiḋne.*

86. Irregular Genitives Singular.

clann, a clan, children, makes	cloinne,	pl.	clanna
deoċ, a drink,	„	diġe,	„	deoċa
sgian, a knife,	„	sgine,	„	sgeana
briaṫar, a (solemn) word,	„	bréiṫre,	„	briaṫra
bláṫaċ, buttermilk,	„	bláiṫċe†		
laṫaċ, mud, mire,	„	laiṫċe‡		
daḃaċ, a vat,	„	daiḃċe	„	daḃaċa
aġaiḋ, a face,	„	aiġṫe	„	aiġṫe

87. Many nouns of this declension form their nominative plural in anna or aċa. The final a of these terminations *may* be dropped in the genitive plural.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
cúis, a cause	cúiseanna
luiḃ, an herb	luiḃeanna
deil, a lathe	deileanna
gluais, a contrivance	gluaiseanna
béim, a stroke	béimeanna
duais, a prize, reward	duaiseanna
léim, a leap	léimeanna
réim, a course, a voyage	réimeanna
áit, a place	áite, áiteanna, áiteaċa
luċ, a mouse	luċa, luċanna
sgoil, a school	sgoileanna (sgolta), sgoilteaċa

* Note the dative singular of these nouns, buiḋin and bruiḋin.

†Also bláṫaiġe. ‡Also laṫaiġe.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
céim, a step	céimeanna
fuaim, a sound	fuamanna
uair, an hour, time	uaire, uaireanna, uaireannta
sráid, a street	sráide, sráideanna, sráideaċa
páirc, a field	páirce, páirceanna
feis, a festival	feiseanna

88. Nouns that take aċa in nominative plural—

obair, a work	oibreaċa
óráid, an oration	óráideaċa
slat, a rod	slata, slataċa
litir, a letter	litre, litreaċa
uḃ, an egg	uiḃe, uiḃeaċa
freuṁ, a root	freuṁa, freuṁaċa
aicíd, a disease	aicídeaċa, aicídí
ciúṁais, an edge	ciúṁaiseaċa
coicṫiḋis, a fortnight	coicṫiḋiseaċa, coicṫiḋisí
truaill, a sheathe, a scabbard	truailleaċa
leac, a flag, a flat stone	leaca, leacaċa, leacraċa

89. The following take te, ṫe, or ṫa in the nominative plural; aḋ may be added in the genitive plural:—coill*, a wood; túir, a pillar, a prop; tír, a country (pl. tíorṫa); aġaiḋ, face (pl. aiġṫe); speur, a sky, speurṫa.

90. Sometimes when the last vowel of the nominative singular is i preceded by a broad vowel, the

* Coill is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

genitive plural is formed by dropping the i, as súil, an eye, gen. pl. súl; fuaim, a sound, gen. pl. fuam, &c.

For a list of nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to this declension, see Appendix II.

THIRD DECLENSION.

91. The 3rd declension includes (1) personal nouns ending in óir (all masculine), (2) derived nouns in aċt or aċd (feminine), (3) other nouns ending in consonants which are, as a rule, masculine or feminine according as they end in broad or slender consonants.

92. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding a. If the last vowel of the nominative be i preceded by a broad vowel, the i is usually dropped in the gen., as toil, a will, gen. tola.

93. The **nominative plural** is usually the same as the genitive singular; but personal nouns ending in óir add í or iḋe to the nominative singular.

94. Most of the derived nouns in aċt, being abstract in meaning, do not admit of a plural. Mallaċt, a curse, and a few others have plurals. Fuaċt, cold, although an abstract noun in aċt, is masculine.

95. The vowels of the nominative often undergo a change in the formation of the genitive singular. These changes are just the opposite of the vowel changes of the 1st and 2nd declensions (see pars. 60 and 78).

Change i or io in nominative into ea in the genitive.
,, u ,, ui ,, ,, o ,,

Examples.

96. cnáṁ,* a bone.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnáṁ	cnáṁa
Gen.	cnáṁa	cnáṁ
Dat.	cnáṁ	cnáṁaiḃ
Voc.	a ċnáṁ	a ċnáṁa

97. fíon, wine.

Nom. & Acc.	fíon	fíona
Gen.	fíona	fíon
Dat.	fíon	fíonaiḃ
Voc.	a ḟíon	a ḟíona

98. crios, a belt, a girdle.

Nom. & Acc.	crios	creasa
Gen.	creasa	crios
Dat.	crios	creasaiḃ
Voc.	a ċrios	a ċreasa

99. feoil, flesh, meat.

Nom. & Acc.	feoil	feola
Gen.	feola	feoil
Dat.	feoil	feolaiḃ
Voc.	a ḟeoil	a ḟeola

---

*Also spelled cnáiṁ in nom. sing.

100. bádóir, a boatman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	bádóir	bádóirí (bádóiriḋe)
Gen.	bádóra	bádóir, bádóirí
Dat.	bádóir	bádóiriḃ (bádóiriḋiḃ)
Voc.	a ḃádóir	a ḃádóirí (a ḃádóiriḋe)

101. druim, masc., the back.

Nom. & Acc.	druim	dromanna
Gen.	droma	dromanna
Dat.	druim	dromannaiḃ
Voc.	a ḋruim	a ḋromanna

102. greim, masc., a piece.

Nom. & Acc.	greim	greamanna
Gen.	greama	greamanna
Dat.	greim	greamannaiḃ
Voc.	a ġreim	a ġreamanna

103. Some nouns of this declension, ending in l or n, form their nominative pl. by adding ta or te to the nom. sing. These may add aḋ to form gen. pl., as—

móin,* a bog,	nom. pl.	móinte
táin, a drove,	,,	táinte
bliaḋain, a year,	,,	bliaḋanta†

* móin is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite Nouns, par. 131.

† bliaḋna after numerals, as oċt mbliaḋna, eight years.

104. Some nouns of this declension form their nom. pl. by adding nna to the gen. singular. These may drop the final a in the gen. pl.:—

	NOM. PLURAL.		
am, time	amannta	or	amanna
sruṫ, a stream	sroṫa	,,	sroṫanna
druim, m., a back		,,	dromanna
guṫ, a voice	goṫa	,,	goṫanna
greim, m., a piece		,,	greamanna
ciṫ, or ciot, a shower	ceaṫa	,,	ceaṫanna
cleas, a trick	cleasa	,,	cleasanna
anam, a soul	anma	,,	anmanna
daṫ, a colour	daṫa	,,	daṫanna
ainm, a name	ainmne, ainmneaċa, anmanna		
maiḋm, a defeat	maḋma, maḋmanna		

105. Other Nominatives Plural.

gníoṁ, a deed, an act	makes	gníoṁarṫa*
connraḋ, a league	,,	connarṫa
cáin†, a tax	,,	cánaċa
buaċaill, a boy	,,	buaċaillí
cliaṁain, a son-in-law	,,	cliaṁnaċa
leabaḋ,‡ f., a bed	,,	leabṫa, leapaċa, leapa
cuid, a share, a portion	,,	codaċa

For a list of nouns belonging to this declension, see Appendix III.

---

* Really pl. of gníoṁraḋ. † Cáin is also 5th declension.

‡ Also spelled leabaiḋ.

111. cailín, masc., a girl.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.		
Nom. & Acc.	cailín	cailíní	or	(cailíniḋe)
Gen.	cailín	cailíní (cailín)	,,	(cailíniḋe)
Dat.	cailín	cailíniḃ	,,	(cailíniḋiḃ)
Voc.	a ċailín	a ċailíní	,,	(a ċailíniḋe)

112. tigearna a lord.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	tigearna	tigearnaiḋe
Gen.	tigearna	cigearnaiḋe
Dat.	tigearna	tigearnaiḋiḃ
Voc.	a ṫigearna	a ṫigearnaiḋe

113. The following nouns take te immediately after the last consonant in the nominative plural:—

baile, a town	plural	bailte or bailteaċa
sloinne, a surname	,,	sloinnte
múille, a mule	,,	múillte
míle, a thousand, a mile	,,	mílte*
léine, a shirt	,,	léinte, léinteaċa
teine,† a fire	,,	teinte, teinteaċa
cúinne, a corner	,,	cúinnte

114. The following nouns add ṫe in nominative plural, viz., all nouns ending in ḋe or ġe—e.g. croiḋe, a heart, pl. croiḋṫe; also caoi, a way, a method; daoi, a fool; saoi, a wise man; draoi, a druid; dlaoi, a curl.

* míle, a thousand, or a mile, is invariable after a numeral.

†teine is also 5th. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

ᵹnó, a work (pl. ᵹnóṫa),* níḋ, or ní, a thing (pl. neiṫe); ꝺuine, a person, makes ꝺaoine in nom. pl.

uinᵹe, an ounce, ,, uinᵹeaċa ,,
eaꞅna, a rib, ,, eaꞅnaċa ,,

115. A few proper nouns, although not ending in a vowel or ín, belong to this declension, and do not change their form in any of their cases, viz.:—Páꝺꞃaiᵹ, Patrick; ᵹeaꞃóiꝺ, Gerald; Muiꞃiꞅ, Maurice; Caṫaoiꞃ, Cahir.

The word luċꞇ, a people, does not change in gen.

THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

116. Most of the nouns belonging to this declension end in a vowel, and are, with a few exceptions, feminine.

117. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding a *broad consonant.*

This consonant varies in different nouns, but is usually n, nn, sometimes ꝺ, ḋ, or ċ. When the nominative singular ends in a consonant, a or ea comes between that consonant and the consonant added.

118. The **dative singular** is formed by attenuating the genitive. In the case of those nouns which form the genitive by adding ċ, the dative singular is usually like the nominative.

*ᵹnóṫaiḋe is spoken in Kerry.

119. The **nominative plural**, as a general rule, is formed by adding a to the genitive singular. A few form their nominative plural by adding e to the gen. sing. This is accompanied with syncope, as in cáirde, friends; náiṁde, enemies; gaiḃne, smiths; and aiḃne, rivers, which are the plurals of cara, náṁa, gaḃa, and aḃ, or aḃa.

Some others form the nominative plural by attenuating the genitive singular, as in laċain, ducks; coin, hounds; fiċid, twenty; caoiriġ, sheep; coṁursain, neighbours.

The **genitive plural** is exactly like the genitive singular.

Examples.

120. pearsa, fem., a person.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	pearsa	pearsana
Gen.	pearsan	pearsan
Dat.	pearsain	pearsanaiḃ
Voc.	a ṗearsa	a ṗearsana

121. cara, fem., a friend.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cara	cáirde
Gen.	carad	carad
Dat.	caraid	cáirdiḃ
Voc.	a ċara	a ċáirde

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
122.	gaḃa, masc., a smith.	
Nom. & Acc.	gaḃa	gaiḃne
Gen.	gaḃann	gaḃann
Dat.	gaḃainn	gaiḃniḃ
Voc.	a ġaḃa	a ġaiḃne
123.	laċa, fem., a duck.	
Nom. & Acc.	laċa	laċain
Gen.	laċan	laċan
Dat.	laċain	laċanaiḃ
Voc.	a laċa	a laċana
124.	cuisle, fem., a vein.	
Nom. & Acc.	cuisle	cuisleanna
Gen.	cuisleann	cuisleann
Dat.	cuislinn	cuisleannaiḃ
Voc.	a ċuisle	a ċuisleanna
125.	caora, fem., a sheep.	
Nom. & Acc.	caora	caoirig
Gen.	caoraċ	caoraċ
Dat.	caoraig	caorċaiḃ, caoraċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċaora	a ċaorċa or a ċaoraċa
126.	caṫaoir, fem., a chair.	
Nom. & Acc.	caṫaoir	caṫaoireaċa
Gen.	caṫaoireaċ	caṫaoireaċ
Dat.	caṫaoir	caṫaoireaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċaṫaoir	a ċaṫaoireaċa

SINGULAR (no Plural).

127.	Nom. & Acc.	Éire (Ireland)
	Gen.	Éireann
	Dat.	Éirinn
	Voc.	a Éire
128.	Nom. & Acc.	Teaṁair (Tara)
	Gen.	Teaṁraċ
	Dat.	Teaṁraiġ or Teaṁair
	Voc.	a Ṫeaṁair
129.	Nom. & Acc.	Alba (Scotland)
	Gen.	Alban
	Dat.	Albain
	Voc.	a Alba

130. The following nouns are used only in the plural, referring rather to the *inhabitants* of the place than to the place itself:—

Sacsana, England.

Nom. & Acc.	Sacsana or Sacsain
Gen.	Sacsan
Dat.	Sacsanaiḃ

	Laiġin, Leinster.	Connaċta, Connaught.	Ulaiḋ, Ulster.
Nom. & Acc.	Laiġin	Connaċta	Ulaiḋ
Gen.	Laiġean	Connaċt	Ulaḋ
Dat.	Laiġniḃ	Connaċtaiḃ	Ultaiḃ

A large list of the commonly used nouns, which belong to this declension, are given in Appendix IV.

Heteroclite Nouns.

131. Heteroclite nouns are those which belong to more than one declension. The following are the chief nouns of this class, We give only the genitive case in the singular, as the other cases present no difficulty. The irregular nominative plurals only are given :—

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
briaṫar, a word	1 & 2	briaṫair bréiṫre	
sgiaṫ, a shield	1 & 2	sgéiṫ sgéiṫe	
teine, a fire	4 & 5	teine teineaḋ	teinte
beaṫa, life	4 & 5	beaṫa beaṫaḋ	
sliġe, a way	4 & 5	sliġe sliġeaḋ	sliġte
coill, a wood	2 & 5	coille coilleaḋ	coillte
móin, a bog	3 & 5	móna mónaḋ	móinte
talaṁ, m., land	1 & 5	talaiṁ, m. talṁan, f.	
eorna, barley	4 & 5	eorna eornan	
breiṫeaṁ, a judge	1 & 5	breiṫiṁ breiṫeaṁan	breiṫeaṁain breiṫeaṁna

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
feiċeaṁ, a debtor	1 & 5	feiċiṁ feiċeaṁan	feiċeaṁain feiċeaṁna
srón, f., a nose	2 & 3	sróine sróna	
cuaċ, a cuckoo	1 & 2	cuaiċ, m. cuaiċe, f.	cuaiċ cuaċa
cóṁra, a coffer	4 & 5	cóṁra cóṁran	cóṁrana
cáin, a tax	3 & 5	cána cánaċ	cána cánaċa
coróin, a crown	2 & 5	coróine corónaċ crónaċ	corónaċa

All abstract nouns ending in eas or as may belong either to the 1st or 3rd declension; as, aoiḃneas, pleasure, gen. aoiḃnis or aoiḃneasa. Being abstract nouns they are not used in the plural.

Irregular Nouns.

132. teaċ, masc., a house.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	teaċ	tiġṫe
Gen.	tiġe*	tiġṫe(aḋ), teaċ
Dat.	tiġ, teaċ	tiġṫiḃ
Voc.	a ṫeaċ	a ṫiġṫe

* It has also the forms toiġe in gen, and toiġ in dative.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	sliaḃ, masc., a mountain.	
Nom. & Acc.	sliaḃ	sléiḃte
Gen.	sléiḃe	sléiḃte
Dat.	sléiḃ, sliaḃ	sléiḃtiḃ
Voc.	a ṡliaḃ	a ṡléiḃte

	aṫair, masc., a father.	
Nom. & Acc.	aṫair	aiṫre or aiṫreaċa
Gen.	aṫar	aiṫreaċ ,, aiṫreaċa
Dat.	aṫair	aiṫreaċaiḃ
Voc.	a aṫair	a aiṫre or a aiṫreaċa

The word máṫair, a mother; bráṫair, a brother (in religion), and dearḃráṫair, a brother (by blood), are declined like aṫair. These words formerly belonged to the 3rd declension, making their genitive in a as aṫara, máṫara, &c., but they have long since lost the final a of the genitive. Some grammars still class these words with the 3rd declension. The genitive of siúr, a sister (in religion) is seaṫar (siúra is also found); and that of deirḃṡiúr, a sister (by blood), is deirḃṡeaṫar (or deirḃṡiúra).

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	rí, masc., a king.	
Nom. & Acc.	rí	ríġṫe, ríoġṫa
Gen.	ríoġ	ríġṫe, ríoġ
Dat.	ríġ	ríġṫiḃ
Voc.	a rí	a ríġṫe

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	bean, fem., a woman.	
Nom. & Acc.	bean	mná
Gen.	mná	ban
Dat.	mnaoi	mnáiḃ
Voc.	a ḃean	a ṁná
	bó, fem., a cow.	
Nom. & Acc.	bó	ba
Gen.	bó	bó
Dat.	buin	buaiḃ
Voc.	a ḃó	a ḃa
	Dia, masc., God.	
Nom. & Acc.	Dia	Dée, Déiṫe
Gen.	Dé	Dia, Déiṫeaḋ
Dat.	Dia	Déiṫiḃ
Voc.	a Ḋé, a Ḋia	a Ḋée

lá, masc., a day.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	lá	laeṫe, laeṫeanta*
Gen.	lae	laeṫeaḋ, laeṫeanta, lá
Dat.	ló, lá	laeṫiḃ, laeṫeantaiḃ
Voc.	a lá	a laeṫe, a laeṫeanta
	cré, fem., soil, earth.	
Nom. & Acc.	cré	créiḋeana
Gen.	criaḋ, créiḋeaḋ	criaḋ
Dat.	créiḋ, cré	créiḋeanaiḃ
Voc.	a ċré	a ċréiḋeana.

* Seaċt lá na seaċtṁaine (always used), the 7 days of the week.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.

mí, fem., a month.

Nom. & Acc.	mí	míosa†
Gen.	míosa	míos
Dat.	mís, mí.	míosaiḃ

ceó, masc., a fog. ceoġana

Nom. & Acc.	ceó	ceóċa, ciaḋ
Gen.	ciaċ ceoiġ	ceó
Dat.	ceó	ceóċaiḃ

ga, masc., a spear, javelin, sunbeam.

Nom. & Acc.	ga	gaeṫe, gaoi, gaoiṫe
Gen.	ga, gae, gaoi	gaoiṫe(aḋ), gaṫ
Dat.	ga	gaeṫiḃ, gaoiṫiḃ

ó or ua, masc., a grandson.

Nom. & Acc.	ó, ua	uí
Gen.	í, uí	ua
Dat.	ó, ua	iḃ. uiḃ
Voc.	a uí	a uí

gé, masc., a goose

Nom. & Acc.	gé or géaḋ	géanna, géaḋa, geóiḋ
Gen.	gé ,, géiḋ, geoiḋ	géanna, géaḋ
Dat.	gé ,, géaḋ	géannaiḃ, géaḋaiḃ
Voc.	a ġé ,, a ġéaḋ	a ġéanna, a ġéaḋa

fríġ, fem., a fleshworm.

Nom. & Acc.	fríġ	fríġdeaċa
Gen.	fríġde	fríġdeaċ(a)
Dat.	fríġid	fríġdeaċaiḃ

† mí after numerals as oċt mí, 8 months: míonna is spoken in Kerry as plural of mí.

CHAPTER III.

The Adjective.

I. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES.

133. In Irish the adjective agrees with the noun which it qualifies in gender, number, and case.

There are four declensions of adjectives. Adjectives are declined very much like nouns; the great difference is that they never* take the termination ıḃ in the dative plural (though formerly they did). The dative plural is invariably like the nominative plural.

Adjectives, in forming their genitive singular, undergo the same VOWEL-CHANGES as nouns, as—

ȝoɼm, blue, gen. masc. ȝuıɼm
ȝeal, bright, ,, ȝıl, &c.

FIRST DECLENSION.

134. All adjectives ending in a broad consonant, as móɼ, bán, ꝼıonn, &c., **belong to the 1st declension.**

135. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a masculine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 1st declension (see maoɼ, &c., pars. 55, 57), except that the nom., acc., dat., and voc. plural are always alike, and are formed by adding a to the nominative singular.

*When used as nouns they take the termination.

136. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a feminine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 2nd declension (see cos, par. 67, &c.), but it never takes iḃ in the dative plural.

Adjectives ending in aċ form their plural by adding a, both for masculine and feminine.

Examples.

137. mór, big.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.
Nom. & Acc.	mór	mór	móra
Gen.	móir	móire	mór
Dat.	mór	móir	móra
Voc.	móir	mór	móra

138. geal, bright.

Nom. & Acc.	geal	geal	geala
Gen.	gil	gile	geal
Dat.	geal	gil	geala
Voc.	gil	geal	geala

139. díreaċ, straight, direct.

Nom. & Acc.	díreaċ	díreaċ	díreaċa
Gen.	díriġ	díriġe	díreaċ
Dat.	díreaċ	díriġ	díreaċa
Voc.	díriġ	díreaċ	díreaċa

140. The following list of adjectives gives examples of the vowel-changes mentioned above. The genitive

masculine is given; the genitive feminine is formed by adding e:—

NOM.	GEN.		NOM.	GEN.	
lom	luim	bare	searḃ	seirḃ	bitter
gorm	guirm	blue	seang	seing	slender
borb	buirb	rough	géar	géir	sharp
crom	cruim	bent	díreaċ	díriġ	straight
donn	duinn	brown	uaigneaċ	uaigniġ	lonely
bog	buig	soft	Albanaċ	Albanaiġ	Scotch
boċt	boiċt	poor	fionn	finn	fair
trom	truim	heavy	fial	féil	generous
mear	mir	active	fliuċ	fliċ	wet
ceart	cirt (ceirt)	right	beag	big	small
			críon	crín	withered
deas	deis	pretty	teann	teinn	stern
dearg	deirg	red			

141. There are five or six adjectives of the first declension which are syncopated in the genitive singular feminine and in the plural:—

NOMINATIVE.	GEN. SING. Masc.	GEN. SING. Fem.	PLURAL. Both Genders.
uasal, noble	uasail	uaisle	uaisle
dílеas, beloved, dear	dílis	dílse	dílse
reaṁar, fat	reaṁair	reiṁre	reaṁra
íseal, low	ísil	ísle	ísle
gearr, short	girr*	giorra (irreg.)	gearra

* gearra is sometimes used in the spoken language.

SECOND DECLENSION.

142. All adjectives ending in a slender consonant, except those in ⁊ṁ⁊ıl, belong to the second declension.

In the singular all the cases, both masculine and feminine, are alike, *except the genitive feminine* which is formed by adding e.

In the plural both genders are alike. All the cases, with the exception of the genitive, are alike, and are formed by adding e to the nominative singular.

The genitive plural is the same as the nominative singular.

Example.

143. maıṫ, good.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	maıṫ	maıṫ	maıṫe
Gen.	maıṫ	maıṫe	maıṫ
Dat.	maıṫ	maıṫ	maıṫe
Voc.	maıṫ	maıṫ	maıṫe

144. Notice the following examples of syncope in the genitive feminine and in the plural:—

aoıḃınn, gen. sing. fem. and pl. aoıḃne, pleasant
áluınn, ,, ,, áılne (áılle), beautiful
mılır, ,, ,, mılre, sweet

145. The following adjectives are irregular:—

cóır, gen. sing. fem. and plural córa, right, just
deacaır, ,, ,, deacra, difficult
rocaır, ,, ,, rocra, easy

THE THIRD DECLENSION.

146. The third declension includes all those adjectives which end in aṁail. This termination has the same signification as the English affix *like* in warlike, or *ly* in manly, princely, &c.

In both numbers the two genders are alike. All the cases in the singular are the same, except the genitive, which is formed by adding a. This is always accompanied by syncope. All the cases of the plural (except the genitive) are the same as the gen. sing. There are no exceptions or irregularities in this declension.

Example.

147. fearaṁail, manly.

	SINGULAR. Both Genders.	PLURAL. Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	fearaṁail	fearaṁla
Gen.	fearaṁla	fearaṁail
Dat.	fearaṁail	fearaṁla
Voc.	fearaṁail	fearaṁla

FOURTH DECLENSION.

148. All adjectives ending in a vowel belong to the fourth declension, as fada, long; órḋa, golden. They have no inflexions whatever, all the cases, singular and plural, being exactly alike.

There are two exceptions—viz., ᴛe, hot, warm; and ḃeo, alive. Ꞇe (often spelled ᴛeıṫ), becomes ᴛeo in the genitive singular feminine, and also in the plural of both genders.

Ḃeo, alive, becomes ḃeoḋa in the plural. In the singular it is quite regular, except after the word Ꝺıa; its genitive is then ḃí, as Ṁac Ꝺé ḃí, the Son of the living God.

Rules for the Aspiration of the Adjectives.

These rules really belong to Syntax, but for the convenience of the student we give them here.

149. (*a*) An adjective beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, in the genitive masculine singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders.

(*b*) The adjective is also aspirated in the nominative and accusative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant.

Exceptions to the Rules for Aspiration.

150. (*a*) An adjective beginning with ᴅ or ᴛ is usually not aspirated when the noun ends in ᴅ, n, ᴛ, l, or ꞅ (dentals).

(*b*) c and ᵹ are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in c, ᵹ, or nᵹ.

(*c*) p and b are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in p, b, or m.

These exceptions apply to most rules for the aspiration of nouns as well as adjectives.

(*d*) The genitive of nouns of the 3rd and 5th declensions ought not to have the initial of the adjective following them aspirated. Usage, however, differs somewhat on this point.

Rules for Eclipsing the Adjective.

151. (*a*) The adjective is usually eclipsed in the genitive plural, even though the article is not used before the noun; and if the adjective begins with a vowel n is prefixed.

(*b*) The initial of an adjective following a noun in the dative sing. should, as a rule, be aspirated; but whenever the noun is eclipsed after the article the adjective is often eclipsed also; aspiration in this case is just as correct as eclipsis, and is more usual.

Examples

152. Noun, Adjective and Article declined in combination.

an fear mór, the big man.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	an fear mór	na fir ṁóra
Gen.	an ḟir ṁóir	na ḃfear mór
Dat.	leis an ḃfear ṁór	leis na fearaiḃ móra
Voc.	a ḟir ṁóir	a ḟeara móra

an tseamróg glas ḃeag, the green little shamrock.

Nom. & Acc.	an tseamróg glas ḃeag	na seamróga glasa beaga
Gen.	na seamróige glaise bige	na seamróg nglas mbeag
Dat.	ó'n tseamróig glais ḃig	ó na seamrógaiḃ glasa beaga
Voc.	a ṡeamróg glas ḃeag	a ṡeamróga glasa beaga

an tsean-ḃean ḃoċt, the poor old woman.

Nom. & Acc.	an tsean-ḃean ḃoċt	na sean-ṁná boċta
Gen.	na sean-ṁná boiċte	na sean-ḃan mboċt
Dat.	do'n tsean-ṁnaoi ḃoiċt	do na sean-ṁnáiḃ boċta
Voc.	a ṡean-ḃean ḃoċt	a ṡean-ṁná boċta

N.B.—When an adjective precedes its noun it is invariable.

Comparison of Adjectives.

153. In Irish there are two comparisons—(1) the comparison of equality, (2) the comparison of superiority.

154. The comparison of equality is formed by placing ċoṁ (or ċo), **"as" or "so," before the adjective, and** le, **"as," after it.** (This le becomes leis before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.)

If a verb occurs in the second portion of the sentence, ᴀᵹuᴘ (not ʟe) must be used for the second "as" *in English.* Tá Seaᵹán ċoṁ mór le Seumas, John is as big as James. Ní ḟuil sé ċoṁ láidir leis an ḃfear, he is not as strong as the man. Ní ḟuil sé ċoṁ maiṫ agus (as) ḃí sé, he is not as good as he was.

155. The comparison of superiority has three degrees—the **positive**, the **comparative**, and the **superlative**. The positive is the simple form of the adjective, as bán, geal. The **comparative** and **superlative** **have exactly the same form as the genitive singular feminine** of the adjective, as báine, gile.

156. The comparative degree is always preceded by some part of the verb is, expressed or understood, and in almost every case is followed by the word ná (or ioná), "than."

> Is gile an ġrian ná an ġealaċ,
> The sun is brighter than the moon.
>
> An fearr tusa ná do ḋearbráṫair ?
> Are you better than your brother?

157. In a comparative sentence the verb tá (or any other verb) may be used, but even then the *verb* is *must be used.*

Whenever tá (or any other verb) is used in a com-

parative sentence, **the comparative must be preceded by the word** níoꞅ (*i.e.*, ní or niḋ, a thing, and the verb iꞅ) as—

Tá an ġꞃian níoꞅ ġile ná an ġealaċ,
The sun is brighter than the moon.

An ḃfuil tú níoꞅ feaꞃꞃ ná do ḋeaꞃḃꞃáṫaiꞃ?
Are you better than your brother?

158. Whenever the verb tá (or other verb) is in the past or future tense níoꞅ **becomes past or future** accordingly, viz., niḋ ba or niḋ ḃuꞅ. This is not always observed.

He remained quieter, d' ḟan ꞅé niḋ ba ꞅocꞃa;
D' ḟan ꞅé níoꞅ ꞅocꞃa is sometimes used, but the former is the more correct.

159. Every superlative sentence in Irish is a relative sentence. Thus instead of saying "the best man" we say "the man (who) is best"; for "the tallest man," we say "the man (who) is tallest." The word "who" in this case is never translated, for the obvious reason that there is really no simple relative pronoun in Irish.

160. If the sentence happens to be in the past or future "the best man" will have to be translated as "the man (who) was best" or "the man (who) will be best." In such cases iꞅ or aꞅ can never be used. Ba or buḋ must be used in the past tense, and ḃuꞅ for the future

If the first portion of the sentence contains a verb in the conditional mood, the conditional of ır (viz., ᴅo bᴀ, ᴅo is often omitted) must be used.

The highest hill in Ireland, ᴀn cnoc ır ᴀ́ırᴅe ı n-Éırınn.

The biggest man was sitting in the smallest chair,

Ḃí ᴀn ꞅeᴀr bᴀ ṁó nᴀ ꞅuıḋe ınr ᴀn ᵹcᴀṫᴀoır bᴀ luᵹᴀ.

The best man would have the horse,

Ꝺo ḃıᴀḋ ᴀn cᴀpᴀll ᴀᵹ ᴀn ḃꞅeᴀr ᴅo b'ḟeᴀrr

(Lit. The horse would be at the man (who) would be best.)

Intensifying Particles.

161. The meaning of **an adjective can be intensified** by placing any of the following particles before the positive of the adjective. All these particles cause aspiration.

ᴀn, very; ꞅíor (or ꞅír), very or truly (as truly good).

ᵹlé, pure (as pure white); ró, too, excessively.

rᴀ́r, exceedingly; úr, very (in a depreciating sense).

mᴀıṫ, good; ᴀn-ṁᴀıṫ, very good; ꞅíor-ṁᴀıṫ, truly good; ró-ḟuᴀr, too cold.

rᴀ́r ṫe, excessively hot (warm); úır-írıol, very low; úr-ᵹrᴀ́nᴅᴀ, very ugly.

162. In the spoken language the adjective is sometimes intensified by repeating the positive twice, as—

Ḃí sé tinn tinn, he was very sick.

Tá sé trom trom, it is very heavy.

Lá fliuċ fliuċ, a very wet day.

163. Sometimes de is annexed to the comparative; it is really the prepositional pronoun de, of it.

Ní misde (measa+de) tú sin, you are not the worst of that.

Ní misde ḃeiṫ ag braṫ ort! It is no harm to be depending on you.

164. Although the comparative and the superlative are absolutely alike in form, yet they may be easily distinguished:—

(1) By the context; the comparative can be used only when we are speaking of two persons or things, the superlative is always used for more than two.

(2) By the word ná (than) which always follows the comparative, except when de is used; the superlative is never followed by either.

165. When comparing adjectives (*i.e.*, giving the three degrees of comparison), **it is usual to use** níos **before the comparative, and** is **before the superlative,** as—

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
bán	níos báine	is báine
glas	níos glaise	is glaise

Remember that níos and is change their forms according to the tense of the verb in the sentence.

166. **Irregular Comparison.**

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.
beag, little or small	luġa
fada, long	faide, sia
mór, big	mó
olc, bad	measa
maiṫ, good	fearr
gearr, short	giorra
breáġ,* fine	breáġa
minic, often	mionca
te (teiṫ), warm	teó
tirim, dry	tiorma
furus(a), usus } easy	fusa, usa
ionṁuin, dear, beloved	ionṁuine or annsa
gar, near (of place)	goire
fogus, near	foigse, foisge
treun, brave, strong	tréine, treise
gránda, ugly	gráinde
árd, high	áirde, airde, aoirde
iomḋa, many	mó or lia (more numerous)

Neasa and túisge, nearer, sooner, are comparatives which have no positive.

N.B.—The superlatives of the above adjectives have exactly the same forms as the comparatives.

* This word was formerly spelled breáġḋa or breáġṫa, and these forms may be used in the plural.

167. Numeral Adjectives.

CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
1, aon	1st, ceud,* aonṁaḋ
2, dó, dá	2nd, dara, dóṁaḋ
3, trí	3rd, tríoṁaḋ treas
4, ceaṫair, ceiṫre	4th, ceaṫraṁaḋ
5, cúig	5th, cúigeaḋ, cúigṁaḋ
6, sé	6th, seiseaḋ, séṁaḋ
7, seaċt	7th, seaċtṁaḋ
8, oċt	8th, oċtṁaḋ
9, naoi	9th, naoṁaḋ
10, deiċ	10th, deaċṁaḋ, deiċeaḋ
11, aon deug	11th, aonṁaḋ deug
12, dó or dá ḋeug	12th, dara deug
13, trí deug	13th, treas deug, tríoṁaḋ deug
14, ceaṫair deug or ceiṫre deug	14th, ceaṫraṁaḋ deug
15, cúig deug	15th, cúigeaḋ deug
16, sé deug	16th, seiseaḋ deug
17, seaċt deug	17th, seaċtṁaḋ deug
18, oċt deug	18th, oċtṁaḋ deug
19, naoi deug	19th, naoṁaḋ deug
20, fiċe	20th, fiċeaḋ
21, aon is (or as) fiċe; aon ar ḟiċid	21st, aonṁaḋ ar ḟiċid

* The c of ceud is usually aspirated after the article.

CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
22, dó or dá is fiċe; dó or dá ar ḟiċid	22nd, dara ar ḟiċid
23, trí is fiċe; trí ar ḟiċid	23rd, tríoṁaḋ ar ḟiċid or treas ar ḟiċid
30, deiċ is fiċe [tríoċa]	30th, deaċṁaḋ ar ḟiċid
31, aon deug is fiċe	31st, aonṁaḋ deug ar ḟiċid
32, dó or dá ḋeug is fiċe	32nd, dara deug ar ḟiċid
37, seaċt deug is fiċe	37th, seaċtṁaḋ deug ar ḟiċid
40, dá ḟiċid [ceaṫraċa]	40th, dá ḟiċideaḋ
41, aon is dá ḟiċid	41st, aonṁaḋ ar ḋá ḟiċid
44, ceaṫair or ceiṫre is dá ḟiċid	44th, ceaṫraṁaḋ ar ḋá ḟiċid
50, deiċ is dá ḟiċid; leiṫ-ċeud [caoga]	50th, deaċṁaḋ ar ḋá ḟiċid
51, aon deug is dá ḟiċid	51st, aonṁaḋ deug ar ḋá ḟiċid
60, trí fiċid [seasga]	60th, trí fiċideaḋ
61, aon is trí fiċid	61st, aonṁaḋ ar ṫrí fiċid
70, deiċ is trí fiċid [seaċtṁoga]	70th, deaċṁaḋ ar ṫrí fiċid
71, aon deug is trí fiċid	71st, aonṁaḋ deug ar ṫrí fiċid
80, ceiṫre fiċid [oċtṁoga]	80th, ceiṫre fiċideaḋ
81, aon is ceiṫre fiċid	81st, aonṁaḋ ar ċeiṫré fiċid
90, deiċ is ceiṫre fiċid [noċa]	90th, deaċṁaḋ ar ċeiṫre fiċid

CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
91, aon deug is ceiṫre fiċid	91st, aonṁaḋ deug ar ċeiṫre fiċid
100, céad (ceud)	100th, ceudaḋ
101, aon is ceud	101st, aonṁaḋ ar ċeud
200, dá ċeud	200th, dá ċeudaḋ
300, trí ċeud	300th, trí ċeudaḋ
400, ceiṫre ċeud	400th, ceiṫre ċeudaḋ
800, oċt gceud	800th, oċt gceudaḋ
1000, míle	1000th, míleaḋ
2000, dá ṁíle	2000th, dá ṁíleaḋ
3000, trí ṁíle	3000th, trí míleaḋ
4000, ceiṫre ṁíle	4000th, ceiṫre míleaḋ
1,000,000, milliún	1,000,000th, milliúnaḋ

Notes on the Numerals.

168. There is another very idiomatic way of expressing the numbers above twenty-one, viz., by placing the word fiċead alone after the first numeral:—deiċ fiċead, 30: fiċead is really the genitive of fiċe, so that the literal meaning of deiċ fiċead is ten of twenty; deiċ gcapaill fiċead, 30 horses; seaċt mba fiċead, 27 cows.

169. Whenever any numeral less than twenty is used by itself (*i.e.*, not followed immediately by a noun), the particle a* must be used before it. This a prefixes h- to vowels:—a h-aon, one; a dó, two; a h-oċt, eight.

Tá sé a ceaṫair a ċlog, it is four o'clock.

Tá sé leaṫ-uair d'éis a dó, it is half past two.

* In Ulster and Munster the article an is used instead of this a.

170. Very frequently in modern times the particle aſ (=aġuſ) is used instead of iſ in numbers. Aſ in numbers is pronounced iss.

171. A dó and a ceaṫaiṗ **can be used only in the absence of nouns. If the nouns be expressed immediately after "two" and "four,"** dá **and** ceiṫṗe **must be used.**

172. Aon, one, when used with a noun almost always takes the word aṁáin after the noun; as, aon ḟeaṗ aṁáin, one man. Aon by itself usually means "any;" as, aon ḟeaṗ, any man; aon lá, any day. Sometimes aon is omitted and aṁáin only is used, as lá aṁáin, one day.

173. Under the heading "Ordinals" two forms will be found for nearly all the smaller numbers. *The forms given first are the ones generally used.* As the secondary forms are often met with in books, they are given for the sake of reference. Céad, **first, is used by itself, but** aonṁaḋ **is used in compound numbers, such as 21st, 31st, &c.**

First, *as an adverb,* is aṗ d-túṗ or aṗ d-túiſ, never, ceud.

174. The d of dá, two is always aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters, d, n, t, l, ſ, or after the possessive adjective a, her.

The words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, given in brackets, are the old words for these numbers; they are not used now, and are given simply for reference.

175. Fiċe, ceud, and míle, together with the old words for 30, 40, 50, &c., are really nouns* and can be declined.

Nom. fiċe	gen. fiċead	dat. fiċid	pl. fiċid
,, ceud	,, céid	,, ceud	,, ceudta
,, míle	,, míle	,, míle	,, mílte

The other words are 5th declension, and form their genitive by adding d.

176. Míle, **a thousand, or a mile, and** ceud, **a hundred never change their forms after a numeral;** naoi míle, 9,000, or 9 miles.

The Personal Numerals.

177. The following numeral nouns are used ~~only~~ especially of persons. All, with the exception of dís and beirt, are compounds of the word fear, a man (the f of which has disappeared owing to aspiration), and the numeral adjectives.

aonar† (aon-ḟear)	one person
[dís (días)]	a pair, a couple
beirt	two persons, a couple‡
triúr (or triar) (trí-ḟear)	three persons
ceaṫrar (ceaṫair-ḟear)	four persons
cúigear	five persons
seisear	six persons

---

* See Syntax, par. 511 and 512.

† Used in the idiomatic expression for "alone." See par. 654.

‡ Lánaṁa, a married couple.

mór-ḟeireaṙ } reaċtaṙ }	seven persons
oċtaṙ	eight persons
naonḃaṙ or nónḃaṙ	nine persons
deiċneaḃaṙ	ten persons
dáreug (dá-ḟeaṙ-deug)	twelve persons

N.B.—The singular form of the article is used before these numerals; as an cúigeaṙ feaṙ, the five men.

The Possessive Adjectives.

178. The term "possessive pronouns" has been incorrectly applied by many grammarians to the "possessive adjectives." A pronoun is a word that can stand for a noun and be separated from the noun, as the words "mine" and "his" in the sentences, "This book is mine," "This cap is his." If I wish to say in Irish, "Did you see his father and mine?" I say, "An ḃfacaiṙ a aṫaiṙ aguṙ m' aṫaiṙ" (not aguṙ mo). **The possessive adjectives in Irish can never stand alone; hence they are not pronouns.**

179. The possessive adjectives are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mo, my	áṙ, our
do, thy	ḃuṙ (or ḃaṙ), your
a, his or her	a, their

180. a, his; a, her; and a, their, are very easily distinguished by their initial changes in the following word.

181. The o of mo and ꝺo is elided whenever they are followed by a word beginning with a vowel or ḟ, as m' ḟuinneóᵹ, my window; ꝺ' aṫair, thy father.

182. Before a vowel ꝺo, thy, is very often written ꞇ or ṫ, as ꝺ' aṫair, ꞇ' aṫair, ṫ' aṫair, thy father; even h-aṫair is sometimes wrongly written.

183. The possessive adjectives may take an emphatic increase, but this emphatic particle always follows the noun, and is usually joined to it by a hyphen; and should the noun be followed by one or more adjectives which qualify it, the emphatic particle is attached to the last qualifying adjective.

The Emphatic Particles.

184. The emphatic particles can be used with (1) the possessive adjectives, (2) the personal pronouns, (3) the prepositional pronouns, and (4) the synthetic forms of the verbs. Excepting the first person plural all the particles have two forms. When the word to which they are attached ends in a *broad* vowel or consonant use the broad particles, otherwise employ the slender.

		SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.		-ſa, -ſe	-ne
2.		-ſa, -ſe	-ſa, -ſe
3.	Masc.,	-ſan, -ſean	-ſan, -ſean
	Fem.,	-ſe, -ſi	

Examples.

mo ṫeaċ-sa, *my* house; a ṫeaċ-san, *his* house; ár dteaċ-ne, *our* house: mise, myself; seisean, himself; aca-san, at themselves; buailim-se, *I* strike.

185. The word féin may also be used (generally as a distinct word) to mark emphasis, either by itself or in conjunction with the emphatic particles: as

mo ṫeaċ féin, my own house
mo ṫeaċ-sa féin, even *my* house
mo ṫeaċ breáġ mór-sa, my fine large house

mo ṫeaċ féin and mo ṫeaċ-sa may both mean "my house," but the latter is used when we wish to distinguish our own property from that of another person; as, your house and mine, do ṫeaċ-sa agus mo ṫeaċ-sa.

186. The possessive adjectives are frequently compounded with the following prepositions:—

i, in (ann), in; le, with; do, to; ó, from; and fá, under.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
i, in or ann, in.	
im, am 'mo, in my	nár, inár, i n-ár, in our
id, ad, 'do, in thy, in your	nbur, i nbur, in your
'na, i n-a, ina, in his, in her	na, i n-a, ina, in their

In the third person singular and plural iona, ionna, anna are also found written.

187. le, with.

lem, le mo,* with my	le n-ár, with our
led, le do,* with thy or your	le nḃur, with your
le n-a, with his or her	le n-a, with their

188. do, to.

dom', do mo,* to my	dár, to our
dod', do do,* to thy or your	do ḃur, dá ḃur, to your
dá, to his or her	dá, to their

189. ó, from.

óm, ó mo,* from my	ó n-ár, from our
ód, ó do,* from thy or your	ó nḃur, from your
ó n-a, from his or her	ó n-a, from their

190. fá or fó, under.

fám, fóm, under my	fá n-ár, fó n-ár, under our
fád, fód, under thy, your	fá nḃur, fó nḃur, under your
fá n-a, fó n-a, under his, her	fá n-a, fó n-a, under their

191. The following compounds are frequently used with verbal nouns:—

ag, at.

agom, ag mo,* at my	'gár, ġár, ag ár, at our
agod, ag do,* at thy, your	ag ḃur, at your
agá, 'gá, ġá, at his, her	agá, 'gá, or ġá, at their

* The forms marked with an asterisk are used in the North.

192. When "you" and "your" refer to one person, the singular words tú and do are used in Irish, d'athair, your father (when speaking to one person), bhur n-athair, your father (when speaking to more than one.)

193. Those of the above combinations which are alike in form are distinguished by the initial effect they cause in the following word; as, ó n-a thigh, from **his** house; ó n-a tigh, from **her** house; ó n-a dtigh, from **their** house.

194. The above combinations may take the same emphatic increase as the uncompound possessive adjectives; óm thigh féin, from *my* own house; óm thigh bhreágh mhór-sa, from *my* fine large house.

Demonstrative Adjectives.

195. The demonstrative adjectives are so,* this; sin,† that; and úd, that or yonder.

so is frequently written seo when the vowel or consonant preceding it is slender.

These words come after the nouns they qualify, and should the noun be followed by any qualifying adjectives, so, sin or úd comes after the last qualifying adjective.

It is not enough to say fear so or bean sin **for** "this man" or "that woman." **The noun must**

---

* Also sa, seo, or se. † Also soin, sain or san.

always be preceded by the article. "This man" is an fear so; "these men," na fir seo; an ḃean so, this woman; an ḃean sin, that woman.

196. The word úd is used when a person or thing is connected in some way with the person to whom you speak or write; an fear úd, that man (whom you have seen or heard of); an oiḋċe úd, that particular night which you remember; or in pointing out an object at some distance, as—

> An ḃfeiceann tú an bád úd? Do you see that boat?

Also with the vocative case, as—

> A ċloigeann úd ṫall atá gan teangaiḋ.
> Thou skull over there that art without tongue.

Indefinite Adjectives.

197. The chief indefinite adjectives are—aon, **any;** éigin, **some, certain;** eile, **other;** uile (*after* the noun), **all, whole; and the phrase** ar biṫ, **any at all.**

e.g., aon lá, any day; aon ċapall, any horse; an tír uile, the whole country; duine éigin, a certain person; an fear eile, the other man. An ḃfaca tú an leaḃar i n-áit ar biṫ? Did you see the book anywhere? Ní ḟuil airgead ar biṫ agam, I have no money at all.

198. The following words are *nouns*, and are fol-

lowed by a genitive or ḋe with the dative. As they are employed to translate English indefinite adjectives, we give them here:—

mórán, much	ḃfuil mórán fíona agat, Have you much wine?
(an) iomad, a great deal, a great many	an iomad airgid, a great deal of money
beagán, little	beagán aráin, a little bread
(an) iomarca, too much	an iomarca uisge, too much water
an-ċuid, rather much	an-ċuid ṡalainn, rather much salt
dóṫain, sáiṫ, enough, sufficient	tá mo ḋóṫain aráin agam, I have sufficient bread
oiread (agus), as much (as), so much (as)	an oiread sin óir, so much gold
tuilleaḋ, more	tuilleaḋ aráin, more bread
neart, plenty, abundance	neart airgid, plenty of money
cuid, roinn or roinnt, a share, some	cuid, roinn or roinnt óir, some gold
a lán, many, numerous	tá a lán fear mbreáġ i n-Éirinn. There are many fine men in Ireland

199. Translation of the word "Some."

(*a*) As has been said, cuid, roinn or roinnt is used to translate the word "some," but there are other words used, as braon, a drop, used for liquids; dornán

or doirnín, a fistfull, used for hay, straw, corn, potatoes, &c.; gráinín, a grain, used for meal, flour, tea, &c.; pingin, a penny, used for money. All these words take a genitive.

(*b*) "Some of" followed by a noun is translated by cuid de followed by a dative case.

(*c*) "Some of" followed by a singular pronoun is translated by cuid de; when followed by a plural pronoun, by cuid ag.

Tá braon bainne agam,	I have some milk
Tá gráinín siúcra aige,	He has some sugar
Cuid de na fearaiḃ,	Some of the men
Tá cuid de sin olc,	Some of that is bad
Tá cuid aca so olc,	Some of these are bad

Translation of "Any."

200. (*a*) When "any" is used in connection with objects that are usually counted it is translated by aon with a singular noun; as aon fear, any man; ḃfuil aon ċapall agat? or ḃfuil capaill ar biṫ agat? Have you any horses?

The following phrases followed by a genitive case are used for "any" with objects that are not counted: aon ġreim, for bread, butter, meat, &c.: aon deór, for liquids; aon ġráinín, for tea, sugar, &c.; ḃfuil aon ġreim feola aige? Has he any meat?

(*b*) "Any of" followed by a noun is translated by aon duine de, for persons; aon ċeann de, for any kind of countable objects; aon ġreim de, &c., as

above. An bfaca tú aon duine de na fearaib? Did you see any of the men? &c.

(*c*) "Any of" followed by a plural pronoun is translated by the phrases given in (*b*), but the preposition ag is used instead of de; as—

Ní fuil aon ceann aca annsin. There is not any of them there.

Ní raib aon duine againn annso ceana. Not one of us was here before.

Distributive Adjectives.

201. Gac, each, every, as gac lá, every day: **uile** (before the noun), every; the definite article, *or* gac, must be used with uile; as an uile fear, every man. Bí gac uile ceann aca tinn. Every one of them was sick.

Distinguish an uile tír, every country, and an tír uile, the whole country.

N.B.—Uile aspirates its noun.

202. The Interrogative Adjectives.

ca or cia, what, as cia méud, what amount? *i.e.*, how much or how many?

ca h-áit, what place? ca h-ainm atá ort? What is your name? ca h-uair, what hour? when?

In English we say "what a man," "what a start," &c., but in Irish we say "what the man," "what the start," as caidé an geit do bainfead sé aisti! What a fright he would give her! (lit. he would take out of her).

CHAPTER IV.

The Pronoun.

203. In Irish there are **nine classes of Pronouns:— Personal, Reflexive, Prepositional, Relative, Demonstrative, Indefinite, Distributive, Interrogative,** and **Reciprocal** pronouns. There are no Possessive pronouns in Irish.

204. Personal Pronouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1st pers.	mé, I	sinn, we
2nd pers.	tú, thou	siḃ, you
3rd pers.	sé, he sí, she	siad, they

Each of the above may take an **emphatic increase,** equivalent to the English suffix *self.*

205.

Emphatic Forms of the Personal Pronouns.

1st pers.	mise, myself	sinne, ourselves
2nd pers.	tusa, thyself	siḃse, yourselves
3rd pers.	seisean, himself sise, herself	siad-san, themselves

206. The word féin is added to the personal pronouns to form the **reflexive pronouns;** as do ḃuaileas mé féin, I struck myself.

The reflexive pronouns are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mé féin, myself	sinn féin, ourselves
tú féin, thyself	sib féin, yourselves
é féin, himself	iad féin, themselves
í féin, herself	

207. The above are also used as *emphatic pronouns;* as, Ċuadamar a baile, mé féin agus é féin. Both he and I went home.

208. The Personal Pronouns have no declension.

It has already been shown that mo, do, a, etc., which are usually given as the genitive cases of the personal pronouns, are not pronouns, but adjectives; because they can never be used without a noun.

The compounds of the pronouns with the preposition do (to) are usually given as the dative cases of the personal pronouns; but agam, agat, etc., or the compounds with any of the other prepositions in par. 216, are just as much the datives of the personal pronouns as dom, duit, &c. Hence the *Irish personal pronouns have no declension.*

209. The Personal Pronouns have however *two forms*:—The **conjunctive** and the **disjunctive. The conjunctive forms are used only immediately after a verb as its subject; in all other positions the disjunctive forms must be used.** The disjunctive forms are also used after the verb is and the passive voice.

The reason why these forms follow ıꞅ is that the word immediately after ıꞅ is *predicate,** not *subject*; and it has just been stated that the conjunctive forms can be used only in immediate connection with a verb as its subject. The subject of the passive voice in Irish is regarded as accusative case.

Conjunctive Pronouns.

210. mé, ꞇú, ꞅé, ꞅí, ꞅınn, ꞅıḃ, ꞅıaꝺ.

Disjunctive Pronouns.

211. mé, {ꞇú, ṫú,} é, í, {ꞅınn, ınn,} {ꞅıḃ, ıḃ,} ıaꝺ,

In mé, ꞇú, ṫú, the vowel is often shortened in Munster, when there is no stress or emphasis. It is shortened in mé, ꞅé, é, ꞅıaꝺ and ıaꝺ in Ulster, when there is no stress.

212. The disjunctive pronouns can be *nominatives* to verbs, but then they will be separated from the verbs: or they may be used in immediate connection with a verb *as its object.*

He is a man, ıꞅ ꞅeaꞃ é (nominative).
He was the king, ꝺoḃ'é an ꞃí é (both nominatives).
This is smaller than that, ıꞅ luġa é ꞅeo ná é ꞅıúꝺ (both nominatives).
I did not strike him, níoꞃ ḃuaıleaꞅ é (accusative).

* This statement will be explained later on. See par 589.

The Neuter Pronoun eaḋ.

213. The pronoun eaḋ is most frequently used in replying to a question asked with any part of the verb is followed by an indefinite predicate.* Naċ breáġ an lá é? Is eaḋ go deimin. Isn't it a fine day? It is indeed. An Sasanaċ é? Ní h-eaḋ. Is he an Englishman? He is not.

This pronoun corresponds very much with the "unchangeable le" in French: as, Etes-vous sage? Oui, je *le* suis.

Whenever is in the question is followed by a pronoun, eaḋ cannot be used in the reply. An é Cormac an rí? Ní h-é. Is Cormac the king? He is not.

Is eaḋ is usually contracted to 'seaḋ (shăh).

214. The phrase is eaḋ ('seaḋ) is often used to refer to a clause going before; as, i gCaṫair na Mart, is eaḋ, ċodail mé aréir. In Westport, it was, that I slept last night. Nuair is mó an anḟoċain (anaċain), is eaḋ, is goire an ċabair. When the distress is greatest, then it is that help is nearest.

215. In Munster when the predicate is an indefinite noun it is usual to turn the whole sentence into an eaḋ-phrase; as—It is a fine day. Lá breáġ, 'seaḋ é. He is a priest. Sagart, 'seaḋ é. He was a slave. Daor, dob 'eaḋ é. Elsewhere these sentences would be, is lá breáġ é; is sagart é; ba ḋaor é.

---

* For "indefinite predicate" refer to par. 585.

Prepositional Pronouns
or
Pronominal Prepositions.

216. Fifteen of the simple prepositions combine with the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns; and to these combinations is given the name of Prepositional Pronouns or Pronominal Prepositions.

All these compounds are very important. As five or six of them occur most frequently these will be given first, and the remainder, if so desired, may be left until the second reading of the book. The important combinations are those of the prepositions, ag, at; ar, on; do, to; le, with; ó, from; and ċum, towards.

All the combinations may take an emphatic suffix. One example will be given.

217.	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	ag, at or with.	
1st pers.	agam, at me	againn, at us
2nd pers.	agat, agad, at thee	agaiḃ, at you
3rd pers.	aige, at him aici, at her	aca, at them

218. The combinations of ag with the emphatic suffixes.

1st pers.	agamsa, at myself	againne, at ourselves
2nd pers.	agatsa, at thyself	agaiḃse, at yourselves
3rd pers.	aigesean, at himself aicise, at herself	acasan, at themselves

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
219.	ar, on.	
1st pers.	orm, on me	orainn, on us
2nd pers.	ort, on thee	oraiḃ, on you
3rd pers.	air, on him uirri or uirṫi, on her	orṫa or orra, on them

220.	do, to.	
1st pers.	dom,* dam, to me	dúinn, to us
2nd pers.	duit, to thee	daoiḃ, díḃ, to you
3rd pers.	dó to him di, to her	dóiḃ, to them

The initial d of these combinations and also those of de are usually aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters d, n, t, l, s.

221.	le, with.	
	liom, with me	linn, with us
	leat, with thee leis, with him	liḃ, with you
	léi, léiṫi, with her	leo, with them

222.	ó, or ua,† from.	
	uaim, from me	uainn, from us
	uait, ,, thee	uaiḃ, ,, you
	uaiḋ,‡ ,, him uaiṫi ,, her	uaṫa, ,, them

---

* daṁ (= dom) is the literary and also the Ulster usage. The emphatic form is doṁsa, never domsa, except in Connaught.

† Ua is never used as a simple preposition.

‡ Uaḋ and uaiḋe (= uaiḋ) are also both literary and spoken forms.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
223.	ċum, towards.				
ċugam,*	towards	me	ċugainn,	towards	us
ċugat, } ċugad, }	,,	thee	ċugaiḃ,	,,	you
ċuige,	,,	him	ċuca,	,,	them
ċuici,	,,	her			
224.	roiṁ, before.				
róṁam,	before	me	róṁainn,	before	us
róṁat, } róṁad, }	,,	thee	róṁaiḃ,	,,	you
roiṁe,	,,	him	rómpa,	,,	them
roimpi,	,,	her			
225.	as, out.				
asam,	out of	me	asainn,	out of	us
asat, } asad, }	,,	thee	asaiḃ,	,,	you
as,	,,	him	asta	,,	them
aisti,	,,	her			
226.	i, in (or ann) in.				
ionnam,	in	me	ionnainn,	in	us
ionnat,	,,	thee	ionnaiḃ	,,	you
ann,	,,	him	ionnta,	,,	them
innti,	,,	her			
227.	de, off, from.				
díom,	off or from	me	dínn,	off or from	us
díot,	,,	thee	díḃ,	,,	you
de,	,,	him	díoḃ,	,,	them
di,	,,	her			

* The g in these combinations is aspirated in Munster, except in ċuige.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
228.	fá, faoi, under.		
fúm,	under me	fúinn,	under us
fút,	,, thee	fúiḃ,	,, you
faoi,	,, him	fúṫa,	,, them
fúiṫi,	,, her		
229.	idir, between.		
eadram,	between me	eadrainn,	between us
eadrat,	,, thee	eadraiḃ,	,, you
idir é,	,, him	eadra,	,, them
idir í,	,, her	(or eatorra),	
230.	ṫar, over or beyond.		
ṫarm or ṫorm,	over me	ṫarainn or ṫorainn,	over us
ṫart or ṫort,	,, thee	ṫaraiḃ ,, ṫoraiḃ,	,, you
ṫairis,	,, him	ṫarsa ,, ṫarsta,	,, them
ṫairsi or ṫairsti,	,, her		
231.	tré, through.		
tríom,	through me	trínn,	through us
tríot,	,, thee	tríḃ,	,, you
tríd,	,, him	tríoṫa,	,, them
tríṫi,	,, her		

The t of these combinations is often aspirated.

232.	um, about.		
umam,	about me	umainn,	about us
umat,	,, thee	umaiḃ,	,, you
uime,	,, him	umpa,	,, them
uimpi,	,, her		

The Relative Pronoun.

233. In Old Irish there was a relative particle used after prepositions, and also a compound relative, but no simple relative in the nominative and accusative cases. The modern relative, in these cases, has arisen from a mistaken idea about certain particles. Before the imperfect, the past, and conditional the particle ꝺo should, strictly speaking, be used. Certain irregular but often used verbs had also an unaccented first syllable, as ᴀᴛá, ꝺo-ḃeıɼım, ꝺo-ċím, &c. These particles and syllables being unaccented were generally dropped at the beginning, but retained in the body, of a sentence, where the relative naturally occurs. Hence they were erroneously regarded as relative pronouns, from analogy with other languages.

In Modern Irish the relative particle may or may not be used in the nominative and accusative cases.

Although this is the origin of the modern relative nevertheless ***it is used as a real relative*** in modern Irish. Whether we call this ᴀ a relative particle or a relative pronoun is a mere matter of choice. We prefer the first name.

234. There is a relative frequently met with in authors, viz.—noċ, meaning who, which or that. This relative is not used in modern spoken Irish, in fact it seems never to have been used in the spoken language. We do not give it in the list of relatives.

235. In modern Irish there are two simple relatives, viz., **the relative particle** ᴀ, which signifies *who, which,* or *that*; and **the negative relative** nᴀċ, which signifies *who...not, which...not, that...not.*

Do not confound the relative pronoun nᴀċ with the conjunction nᴀċ, which means *that* (a conj.)...*not.*

236. The relative particle ᴀ, **expressed or understood, causes aspiration;** nᴀċ **causes eclipsis.**

237. There are also **the compound relatives** cıbé or

ᵹıḋé (also written 'pé), *whoever, whosoever, whatever;* and ᴀ (causing eclipsis), *what, that which, all that.* To these we may add the two *nouns,* ᴀn ᴛé (ᴀ), he who, or the person who; and nᴀ ᴅᴀoıne (ᴀ), they who, or the people who.

Examples of the relative pronouns.

ᴀn ꝼeᴀꞃ ᴀ ḃuᴀılım. The man whom I strike.

ᴀn ꝼeᴀꞃ ḃıᴀꞅ (ḃéıḋeᴀꞅ) ᴀᵹ obᴀıꞃ. The man who will be at work.

ᴀn ꝼeᴀꞃ nᴀċ mbéıḋ ᴀᵹ obᴀıꞃ. The man who will not be at work.

ᴀn ᴛé ᴀ ṁolᴀꞅ mé. He who praises me.

ᴀn ᴛé ᴀ ṁolᴀım. He whom I praise.

ᴀn buᴀċᴀıll ᴀ ḃuᴀılꝼeᴀꞅ é. The boy who will strike him.

nᴀ ᴅᴀoıne ᴀ ḃuᴀılꝼıḋ ꞅé. The people whom he will strike.

ᴀn ᴛé nᴀċ ḃꝼuıl láıᴅıꞃ ní ꝼuláıꞃ ḋó ḃeıṫ ᵹlıc. The person who is not strong *it is necessary* for him to be cunning.

ᴀn ᴛíꞃ ı n-ᴀ ᴅᴛáınıᵹ ꞅıᴀᴅ. The country into which they came.

ıꞅ mınıc ḃᴀıneᴀꞅ ᴅuıne ꞅlᴀᴛ ᴀ ḃuᴀılꝼeᴀꞅ é ꝼéın. 'Tis often a person cuts a rod which will beat himself.

ᴀ ḃꝼuıl ó Ċoꞃcᴀıᵹ ᵹo ᵹᴀıllıṁ. All that is from Cork to Galway.

Cıḃé ċuıꞃeᴀꞅ ꞃoıṁe é ꞅeo ᴅo ḋeunᴀṁ. Whoever proposes to do this.

Demonstrative Pronouns.

238. The demonstrative pronouns are so or seo, *this*; sin, *that*; and súd, *that* (*yonder*). These words are used with reference to some indefinite object, as—

Duḃairt sé sin.	He said that.
Is fíor sin.	That's true.

239. When we are referring to a definite object, these pronouns take the forms é seo, í seo, iad so, é sin, í sin, iad sin, &c.; but in Ulster so and sin are frequently used for a definite object. When the English words "this" and "that" are equivalent to "this one" and "that one," é seo (or é so), é sin, &c., &c., are used everywhere.

Iṫ é seo agus fág é sin,	Eat this and leave that.
Tóg é sin,	Lift that.
Is é seo an rí,	This is the king,
Is í sin Briġid,	That's Brigid.
Cia h-iad so?	Who are these?
An é súd Tomás?	Is that (person yonder) Thomas?
Ní h-é; is é súd é,	No, that's he.

The above forms are perfectly regular. They are usually shortened, especially in conversation. For instance, is é súd é (That's he) is usually contracted to súd é.

Similarly, by contraction we have in the *Ulster Dialect*—

So an ꞅeaꞃ,	That is the man; or, Here's the man.
Sin an ḃean,	That's the woman; or, There's the woman.
Súḋ an áiꞇ,	Yonder is the place.
So miꞅe,	Here I am.

The phrase So ḋuiꞇ é, means,	Here it is for you.
So ḋuiꞇ ḋo leaḃaꞃ,	Here is your book for you.

In all the above phrases ꞅo is frequently pronounced shŭ; hence it is often spelled ꞅeo, to make the spelling agree with the pronunciation.

240. Súḋ, yonder, qualifies a pronoun; whilst úḋ qualifies a noun: as, an ꞅeaꞃ úḋ, yonder man; a ꞅeaꞃ ꞅúḋ, yonder woman's husband.

Indefinite Pronouns.

241. The principal indefinite pronouns are—

caċ (gen. caiċ), all, everybody, everyone else.
uile, all.
aoinneaċ (aoin'ne), anybody.

The following are *nouns*, but they are used to translate English indefinite pronouns, hence we give them here:—

ḋuine aꞃ biṫ, anyone at all.
cuiḋ...cuiḋ eile, some...others
beagán, a few.

An dtáinig aoinneaċ annso? Did anyone come here?

"Cia b-é do ḃáiḋ an macraiḋ?" ar cáċ. "Who is he who drowned the youths?" said all.

Cá ṁeud ubaill atá agat? Tá beagán agam. How many apples have you? I have a few.

Uile ḋóiḃ. To them all.

Do-ġeiḃmíd uile an bás. We all die.

Do ċuadar so uile seaċa aṁail sgáile. All these went past like a shadow.

Distributive Pronouns.

242. The distributive pronouns are:—gaċ, each; gaċ uile, every; gaċ aon, each one, everyone; ceaċtar, either.

Ní ḟuil ceaċtar aca agam, I have not either of them.

Bíoḋ a ḟios ag gaċ aon. Let each one know.

Óir bíonn (bí) fioċ Dé leis (ris) gaċ n-aon ċailleas a reaċt. For the anger of God is on each one who violates His law.

N.B.—The tendency in present-day usage is to employ distributive adjectives followed by appropriate nouns rather than distributive pronouns: *e.g.* Everyone went home. Do ċuaiḋ gaċ uile duine a ḃaile.

Interrogative Pronouns.

243. The chief interrogative pronouns are:—**cia** or **cé**, who, which; **cad**, **creud**, or **caidé**, what; **cé** or **ceurd** (**cia rud**), what; **cia leis**, whose; **cia aca** (**cioca**), which of them.

Cia rinne é sin?	Who did that?
Cad atá agat?	What have you?
Cad é sin agat?	What is that you have?
Caidé atá ort? Cad tá ort?	What ails you?
Cia aca is fearr? Cioca is fearr?	Which of them is the better?
Cia an fear?	Which or what man?
Cia na fir ?	Which men ?
Cia an luaċ ?	What price?
caidé an rud é sin?	What is that?
Cia leis an leaḃar?	Whose is the book?

244. Notice in the last sentence the peculiar position of the words. The interrogative pronoun always comes first in an Irish sentence, even when it is governed by a preposition in English. In Irish we do not say "With whom (is) the book?" but "Who with him (is) the book?"

Further examples of the same construction:—

Cia leis é so?	Whose is this?
Creud fá ar éirigheadar?	Why did they rise?
A Sheagháin, dtiocfaidh tú go Gaillimh? Cad chuige?	John, will you come to Galway? *What for?*
Cia leis bhfuil tú cosmhail?	Whom are you like?

We may also say, Cia bhfuil tú cosmhail leis?

Notice that the adjective cosmhail, *like*, takes le, *with*; not do, to.

245. N.B.—The interrogative pronouns are always nominative case in an Irish sentence. In such a sentence as, Cia bhuaileadar? Whom did they strike? cia is nominative case to is understood, whilst the suppressed relative is the object of bhuaileadar. In cia leis, cad chuige, &c., leis and chuige are prepositional pronouns, not simple prepositions.

Reciprocal Pronoun.

246. The reciprocal pronoun in Irish is a chéile,* meaning *each other*, *one another*. Chuir Fionn a láma i lámhaibh a chéile, Finn put their hands in the hands of one another. Do sgar Osgar agus Diarmuid le n-a chéile. Oscar and Diarmuid separated from each other (lit. "separated with each other"). Bhuaileadar a chéile. They struck each other.

* Literally, his fellow.

Phrases containing the Reciprocal Pronoun.

ó ċéile,* from each other, separated or asunder.
le ċéile,† together.
mar a ċéile, like each other, alike.
trí n-a ċéile, }
tré n-a ċéile, } confused, without any order.
oireaḋ le ċéile, each as much as the other.
i nḋiaiḋ a ċéile, one after the other, in succession.
as gaċ fásaċ i n-a ċéile, out of one desert into another.

CHAPTER V.

THE VERB.

Conjugations.

247. In Irish there are two conjugations of regular verbs. They are distinguished by the formation of the future stem. All verbs of the first conjugation form the first person singular of the future simple in -faḋ or -feaḋ, whilst verbs of the second conjugation form the same part in -óċaḋ or -eóċaḋ.

* ó ċéile, = ó n-a ċéile.

† le ċéile, = le n-a ċéile. This last form is often used, and explains the aspiration in le ċéile

Forms of Conjugation.

248. Every Irish verb, with the single exception of ıp, has three forms of conjugation:—The **Synthetic,** the **Analytic,** and the **Indefinite.**

249. The **synthetic, or pronominal form,** is that in which the persons are expressed by means of terminations or inflections. All the persons, singular and plural, with the single exception of the third person singular, have synthetic forms in practically every tense. The third person singular can never have its nominative contained in the verb-ending or termination.

The following example is the present tense synthetic form of the verb mol, *praise*:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
molaım, I praise.	molamaoıd, we praise.
molaır, thou praisest.	moltaoı, you praise.
molann ré, he praises.	molaıd, they praise.

250. In the **analytic form** of conjugation the persons are not expressed by inflection; the form of the verb remains the same throughout the tense and the persons are expressed by the pronouns *placed after the verb.* The form of the verb in the third person singular of the above example is the form the verb has in the analytic form of the present tense.

The analytic form in every tense has identically the same form as the third person singular of that tense.

N.B.—The analytic form is generally employed in asking questions.

The following is the analytic form of the present tense of molaḋ:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
molaim, I praise.	molann sinn, we praise.
molann tú, thou praisest.	molann siḃ, you praise.
molann sé, he praises.	molann siad, they praise

The analytic form is used in all the tenses, but in some of the tenses it is rarely, if ever, found in some of the persons: for instance, it is not found in the first person singular above. As the analytic form presents no difficulty, it will not be given in the regular table of conjugations.

251. We are indebted to the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for the following explanation of the **Indefinite Form** of conjugation:—

"This third form—*the Indefinite*—has every one of the moods and tenses, but in each tense it *has only one person*, and that person is only *implied*. It is really a personality, but it is not a specific personality. It is only a general, undefined personality.

"This third form of an Irish verb has some very unique powers. . . . I shall illustrate one. An English verb cannot of itself make complete sense alone; this form of an Irish verb can. For instance, 'Buailtear' is a complete sentence. It means, 'A beating is being administered,' or, 'Somebody is striking.' Irish grammarians have imagined that this

form of the verb is passive voice. No, it is not passive voice, for it has a passive of its own; and, again, all intransitive verbs (even the verb τá) possesses this form of conjugation. The nearest equivalents in sense and use to this Irish form are the German '*mann*' and the French '*on*' with the third person singular of the verb."—*Gaelic Journal.*

The usual translation of the French phrase "*on dit*" is, "*It is said.*" "Is said" is certainly passive voice in English, but it does not follow that "*dit*" is passive voice in French. The same remark holds with regard to the Irish phrase "buailtear an gadar," which is usually translated, "The dog is struck." Buailtear is not passive voice; it is *active voice, indefinite form,* and gadar is its object in the *accusative case.* The literal translation of the phrase is, "Somebody strikes the dog." The passive voice of buailtear, *someone strikes,* is tátar buailte, *someone is struck.*

N.B.—The passive or indefinite form is *usually* neither aspirated nor eclipsed.

252. The preceding paragraphs have dealt rather fully with the "indefinite form," and we deem it advisable to add a few modifying remarks. The indefinite form of the verb had certainly two usages in Old Irish. The indefinite usage was as common as at present, but it had also the force and usage of a *true passive,* not merely as indefinite, for the agent was

expressed with the preposition oc or la; and this passive force and usage has continued in full vigour in literature down to modern times. This *passive usage* which has held its ground through Old, Middle, and Modern Irish certainly justifies the existence of a passive voice.

The Indefinite Form can then have a real passive force and usage in Modern Irish. As the passive voice and the indefinite form active voice have the same form, and moreover have only one inflection for each tense, we shall give this form immediately after the various tenses in the tables of conjugations.

MOODS AND TENSES.

253. Verbs have three moods, the **Imperative, the Indicative**, and the **Subjunctive.**

Some grammars add a fourth mood, the Conditional; and some omit the Subjunctive. The Conditional form, however, is always either Indicative or Subjunctive in meaning, and is here classed as a tense under the Indicative Mood.

The **Imperative** has only one tense, the Present. Its use corresponds to that of the Imperative in English.

The **Indicative Mood** has five tenses, the Present, the Imperfect, the Past, the Future, and the Conditional.

The **Present Tense** corresponds to the English Present, and like it usually denotes ***habitual action.***

The so-called Consuetudinal or Habitual Present—*i.e.*, the third person singular ending in -ann—in no way differs from the other parts of the Present in regard to time. The verb bí, however, has a distinct Present, bím, denoting habitual action. In English the Present —*e.g.*, *I write*—generally denotes habitual action. *Present action* is usually signified by a compound tense, *I am writing.* So in Irish the Present, sgríobaim, denotes *habitual action*, and present action is denoted by the compound tense, táim ag sgríobadh. However, as in English, the Present Tense of certain verbs, especially those relating to the *senses* or the *mind*, denote *present* as well as *habitual action*—*e.g.*, cluinim, *I hear*; creidim, *I believe.*

The **Imperfect Tense** is also called the *Habitual* or *Consuetudinal Past.* It denotes habitual action in past time; as, do sgríobainn, *I used to write.*

The **Past Tense** is also called the *Perfect* and the *Preterite.* It corresponds to the Past Tense in English; as, do sgríobas, *I wrote.*

Continuous action in past time is denoted by a compound tense, as in English—*e.g.*, do bíos ag sgríobadh, *I was writing.*

The **Future Tense** corresponds to the Future in English: as sgríobfad, *I shall write.*

The **Conditional** corresponds to the Compound Tense with "*should*" or "*would*" in English: as do sgríobfá, *thou wouldst write.*

The Conditional is also called the **Secondary Future,** because it denotes a future act regarded in the past: as, adubairt sé go sgríobfadh sé. He said that he would write.

In the **Subjunctive Mood** there are only two Tenses, the Present and the Past. This mood is used principally to express a wish, and also after certain conjunctions. See par. 550, &c.

Active Voice, Ordinary Form.

254. Each Tense has the following forms:—

1. The action is merely stated, as—
   Buaileann Seaġán an clár,
   John strikes the table.
2. The action is represented as in progress, as—
   Tá Seaġán ag bualaḋ an ċláir,
   John is striking the table.
3. The action as represented as about to happen—
   Tá Seaġán { ċum / ar tí } an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,
   John is about (is going) to strike the table.
4. The action is represented as completed, as—
   Tá Seaġán d'éis an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,
   John has just struck the table.

Active Voice, Indefinite Form.

255. Each Tense has the following forms, corresponding exactly to those given in the preceding paragraph.

1. Buailtear an clár,
   Someone strikes the table.

2. Tátar ag bualaḋ an ċláir,
   Someone is striking the table.

3. Tátar { ċum / ar tí } an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,
   Someone is about to strike the table.

4. Tátar d'éis an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,
   Someone has just struck the table.

256. Passive Voice, Ordinary Form.

1. (This form is supplied by the Indefinite Active.)

2. Tá an clár dá (or gá) ḃualaḋ,
   The table is being struck.

3. Tá an clár { ċum / ar tí } a ḃuailte,
   The table is about to be struck.

4. Tá an clár buailte,
   The table has (just) been struck.

257. Passive Voice, Indefinite Form.

1. Tátar buailte,
   Someone is struck.

2. Tátar dá (or gá) ḃualaḋ,
   Someone is being struck.

3. Tátar { ċum / ar tí } ḃeiṫ buailte,
   Someone is about to be struck.

4. Tátar buailte,
   Someone has (just) been struck.

258. The Principal Parts of an Irish Verb are—

(1) The 2nd sing. of the Imperative Mood.

(2) The 1st sing. of the Future Simple.

(3) The Past Participle (also called the Verbal Adjective).

(4) The Verbal Noun.

(*a*) The **Imperative 2nd. pers. sing.** gives the stem of the verb from which most of the other tenses and persons are formed.

(*b*) The **Future** tells to what conjugation (first or second) the verb belongs, and gives the stem for the Conditional.

(*c*) The **Past Participle** shows whether ꞇ is aspirated or unaspirated in the following persons, which are formed from the past participle—*i.e.*:

Present, *2nd plural.*
Imperfect, *2nd singular.*

Passive and Indefinite.

Imperative, Present, and *Imperfect.*

Verbal noun.

Gen. sing. and *nom. plural.*

(*d*) With the **Verbal Noun** are formed the compound tenses.

The four following types include all verbs belonging to the first conjugation:—

259. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	P. Participle.	Verbal Noun.	Meaning.
1.	mol	molfaḋ	molta	molaḋ	praise
2.	reub	reubfaḋ	reubṫa	reubaḋ	burst or tear
3.	buail	buailfeaḋ	buailte	bualaḋ	strike
4.	fóir	fóirfeaḋ	fóirṫe	fóiriṫin	help, succour

N.B.—No notice need be taken of the variation in form of verbal nouns, as they cannot be reduced to any rule, but must be learned for each verb. The ending aḋ or eaḋ is that most frequently found, but there are numerous other endings. (See pars. 315 and 316).

260. (1) and (2) are the types for all verbs of the first conjugation whose stem ends in a broad consonant; whilst (3) and (4) are the types for the verbs of the same conjugation whose stem ends in a slender consonant.

As the conjugations of types (2) and (4) are identical with those of types (1) and (3) respectively, except the aspiration of the t in the endings mentioned in par. 258 (c), we do not think it necessary to conjugate in full the four types. We shall give the forms in modern use of the verbs mol and buail, and then give a rule which regulates the aspiration of t in the Past Participle. (See par. 282).

FIRST CONJUGATION.

In the following table the forms marked with an asterisk are not generally used in the analytic form. The forms in square brackets were used in early modern Irish, and are frequently met with in books. Alternative terminations are given in round brackets.

261. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

1st.	——	——
2nd.	mol, praise thou	buail, strike thou
3rd.	molaḋ sé, let him praise	buaileaḋ sé

PLURAL.

1.	molamaois (-amuis) / molam	let us praise	buailimís (eamuis) / buaileam
2.	molaiḋ, praise (you)		buailiḋ
3.	molaidís, / moladaois,	let them praise	buailidís

Indefinite and Passive.

moltar	buailtear

The negative particle for this mood is ná.

262. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

SING.	1.	*molaim, I praise	*buailim, I strike
	2.	molair, &c.	buailir
	3.	molann[a] sé	buaileann[c] sé
PLUR.	1.	molamaoid (amuid)	buailimíd (-imid)
	2.	molann siḃ[b]	buaileann siḃ[d]
	3.	molaid	buailid

---

[a][molaiḋ] [b][moltaoi] [c][buailiḋ] [d][buailtí]

Indef. & Pass.	Moltar	ḃuailtear
Relative form.	Ṁolas	ḃuaileas
Negative.	Ní ṁolaim,	I do not praise.
„	Ní ḃuailir,	You do not strike.
Interrogative.	An molann sé?	Does he praise?
„	An mbuailim?	Do I strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Naċ molaid?	Do they not praise?
„	Naċ mbuaileann sé?	Does he not strike?

263. Imperfect Tense.

SING.	1.*ṁolainn, I used to praise	*ḃuailinn
	2.*ṁoltá, &c.	*ḃuailteá
	3. ṁolaḋ sé	ḃuaileaḋ sé
PLUR.	1. ṁolamaois (-amuis)	ḃuailimís (or imis)
	2. ṁolaḋ siḃ'	ḃuaileaḋ siḃ
	3. ṁolaidís / ṁoladaois	ḃuailidís
Indef. & Pass.	Moltaoi,	Ḃuailtí.
Negative.	Ní ṁolainn,	I used not praise.
„	Ní ḃuaileaḋ sé,	He used not strike.
Interrogative.	An moltá?	Used you praise?
„	An mbuailidís?	Used they strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Naċ molainn?	Used I not praise?
„	Naċ mbuailinn?	Used I not strike?

264. Past Tense.

SING.	1. ṁolas, I praised	ḃuaileas
	2. ṁolais	ḃuailis
	3. ṁol sé	ḃuail sé

PLUR.	1. ṁolamar	ḃuaileamar
	2. ṁolaḃar	ḃuaileaḃar
	3. ṁoladar	ḃuaileadar
Indef. & Pass.	Molaḋ	ḃuaileaḋ
Negative.	Níor ṁolas,	I did not praise.
„	Níor ḃuail sé,	He did not strike.
Interrogative.	Ar ṁolais?	Did you praise?
„	Ar ḃuaileas?	Did I strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Nár ṁol sé?	Did he not praise?
„	Nár ḃuaileamar?	Did we not strike?

265. Future Tense.

SING.	1. molfad, I shall praise	buailfead
	2. molfair, thou wilt praise	buailfir
	3. molfaiḋ sé, &c.	buailfiḋ sé
PLUR.	1. molfamaoid (-amuid)	buailfimíd (imid)
	2. molfaiḋ siḃ[a]	buailfiḋ siḃ[b]
	3. molfaid	buailfid
Relative form.	ṁolfas	ḃuailfeas
Indef. & Pass.	molfar[c]	buailfear[d]
Negative.	Ní ṁolfad,	I shall not praise.
„	Ní ḃuailfiḋ sé,	He will not strike.
Interrogative.	An molfaiḋ sé?	Will he praise?
„	An mbuailfead?	Shall I strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Nać molfair?	Will you not praise?
„	Nać mbuailfid?	Will they not strike?

---

[a] [molfaiṫí] [b] [buailfiṫí]
[c] [molfaiḋear] [d] [buailfiḋear]

266. Conditional or Secondary Future.

SING.	1. ṁolfainn, I would praise	ḃuailfinn
	2. ṁolfá	ḃuailfeá
	3. ṁolfaḋ sé	ḃuailfeaḋ sé
PLUR.	1. ṁolfamaois (famuis)	ḃuailfimís (fimis)
	2. ṁolfaḋ siḃ	ḃuailfeaḋ siḃ
	3. { ṁolfaidís / ṁolfadaois	ḃuailfidís
Indef. & Pass.	molfaiḋe	buailfiḋe

Negative.	Ní ṁolfainn,	I would not praise.
,,	Ní ḃuailfeá,	You would not strike
Interrogative.	An molfá,	Would you praise?
,,	An mbuailfeaḋ sé,	Would he strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Nać molfaḋ sé?	Would he not praise?
,,	Nać mbuailfimís?	Would we not strike?

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

267. Present Tense.

SING.	1. molad	buailead
	2. molair	buailir
	3. molaiḋ sé	buailiḋ sé
PLUR.	1. molamaoid (-amuid)	buailimíd (-imid)
	2. molaiḋ siḃ[a]	buailiḋ siḃ[b]
	3. molaid	buailid
Indef. & Pass.	moltar	buailtear

The negative particle is nár, which always aspirates when possible.

---

[a] [moltaoi] [b] [buailtí]

268. **Past Tense.**

SING.	1. molainn	buailinn
	2. moltá	buailteá
	3. molaḋ sé	buaileaḋ sé
PLUR.	1. molamaois (amuis)	buailim's (-imis)
	2. molaḋ siḃ	buaileaḋ siḃ
	3. { molaidís moladaois	buailidís
Indef. & Pass.	moltaoi	buailtí

NOTES ON THE MOODS AND TENSES.

The Present Tenses.

269. The Present Tense is always formed by adding aim, air, &c., to the stem when the last vowel is broad; if the last vowel is slender add im, ir, eann, &c. The last syllable of the first person plural is often pronounced rapidly—*e.g.*, molamuid (mul'-a-mwid), creidimid (k'red'imid); but in the South of Ireland this syllable is lengthened, molamaoid (mul'-a-mweed), creidimíd (k'red'-imeed). Verbs of more than one syllable ending in ig add mid, not imid, in the first person plural of this tense.

270. In Ulster the ending muid of the first person plural is very often separated from the verb, and used instead of the pronoun sinn as Ċonnaic muid é. We saw him; Ċonnaic sé muid. He saw us. On no account should this corruption be imitated by the student.

271. The *old* form of the third person singular ended in aidh or idh, and the analytic forms *found in books*, and sometimes in the northern dialect, are got from this form: as molaidh sinn, we praise.

272. The analytic form is not usually found in the first person singular of this tense, nor is the synthetic form often used in the second person plural.

The Imperfect Tense.

273. The initial consonant of this tense is usually aspirated in the active voice, when possible.

The termination adh or eadh in the 3rd sing. of this tense, as also in the Imperative and Conditional, is pronounced *okh*.

274. When none of the particles ní, an, nach, &c., precede the Imperfect Tense, do may be used before it. This do may be omitted except when the verb begins with a vowel or f. The compound particles, níor, ar, nár, gur, cár, &c., can *never* be used with the Imperfect Tense.

275. Whenever the word "*would*" is used in English to describe what used to take place, the Imperfect Tense, not the Conditional, is used in Irish, as—

He *would* often say to me. Is minic adeireadh sé liom.

The Past Tense.

276. In the Past Tense active voice the initial consonant of the verb is aspirated. The remark which

has just been made with regard to the use of ꝺo before the Imperfect Tense applies also to the Past Tense.

In the passive voice and indefinite form ꝺo does not aspirate, but prefixes h to vowels.

277. With the exception of the aspiration of the initial consonant, the third person singular of this tense is exactly the same as the second person singular of the Imperative (*i.e.*, the stem of the verb).

278. The particle formerly used before the Past Tense was ꞃo. It is now no longer used by itself, but it occurs in combination with other particles.

The most important of these compounds are:—

(1) Aꞃ, whether (an + ꞃo).	Aꞃ ḃuail ꞅé? Did he strike?
(2) Ꝩuꞃ, that (ꝩo + ꞃo).	Ꝺeiꞃ ꞅé ꝩuꞃ ḃuaileaꞅ é. He says that I struck him.
(3) Cáꞃ, where (cá + ꞃo).	Cáꞃ ċeannuiꝩiꞅ an capall? Where did you buy the horse?
(4) Munaꞃ, unless (muna + ꞃo).	Munaꞃ ḃuail ꞅé, unless he struck.
(5) Níoꞃ, not (ní + ꞃo).	Níoꞃ ċꞃeiꝺ ꞅé. He did not believe.
(6) Náꞃ or náċaꞃ, whether ...not.	Náꞃ ċꞃeiꝺ ꞅé? Did he not believe?

(7) Dár, to whom (do, to + a + ro). — An fear dár geallas mo leaḃar. The man to whom I promised my book.

(8) Ler, by or with which (le + a + ro). — An maide ler buaileaḋ é, The stick with which they beat him (or he was beaten).

279. The compounds of ro aspirate. These compounds are used with the Past Tense of all verbs except the following:—raiḃ, was; tug, gave or brought; rug, bore; faca, saw; táinig, came; fuair, found, got; deaċaiḋ, went; dearna, made or did.

The compounds of ro are used in some places before tug and táinig.

N.B.—Deaċaiḋ and dearna are used instead of ċuaiḋ and rinne after negative and interrogative particles. Instead of deaċaiḋ and dearna, cuaiḋ and dein (din) are used in Munster.

The Future Tense and Conditional.

280. All the inflections of the Future and Conditional in the first conjugation begin with the letter f, which in the spoken language is generally pronounced like "h." This "h" sound combines with the letters b, d and g (whenever the stem ends in these) changing them in sound into p, t, c, respectively.

cpeıꝺꝼeaꝺ	is usually pronounced		k'ret'-udh
ꝼáᵹꝼaꝺ	,,	,,	fau'-kudh
ꞅᵹpíoḃꝼaꝺ	,,	,,	shgree-pudh

N.B.—ꝼ is sounded in the passive voice and indefinite form.

281. The particle ꝺo, causing aspiration, may be used before the Conditional when no other particle precedes it.

Note that the terminations of the Imperative Mood, the Imperfect Tense, and the Conditional are almost the same, excepting the letter ꝼ of the latter.

Rule of the aspiration of ꞇ of Past Participle.

282. The ꞇ of the past participle is aspirated except after the letters ꝺ, n, ꞇ, l, s, ċ, ḋ, ċ and ᵹ̇ (in verbs of one syllable).

283. This participle cannot be used like the English participle to form compound tenses. *He was praised,* is not ḃí ꞅé molꞇa, but molaḋ é. *The Irish participle has always the force of an adjective* denoting the complete state, never the force of an *action in progress.*

284. After ıꞅ the Past Participle denotes what is *proper* or *necessary*; as, Ní molꞇa ḋuıꞇ é. He is not to be praised by you. This form, called the **Participle of Necessity,** should probably be regarded as distinct

from the ordinary past participle, as it may occur in verbs which have no past participle, *e.g.*:—

"Is deiṁin naċ ḃfuil duine naċ beiṫte ḋó ar coiméad orm." "It is certain that there is no person *who will not have to be* on his guard against me." (Letter of Seán Ó Néill, 1561.) "Tuigṫear ar an sgeul, naċ beiṫte do neaċ dul i n-eudóċas." It may hence be learned that *it is not proper* for anyone to fall into despair. Ní beiṫte ag a ḟeunaḋ (or simply, ní seunta). It must not be denied. Here beiṫte is the *Participle of Necessity* of the verb bí.

285. Derivative Participles.

ion-ṁolta	in-reubṫa	ion-ḃuailte	ion-ḟóirṫe
so-ṁolta	so-reubṫa	so-ḃuailte	so-ḟóirṫe
do-ṁolta	do-reubṫa	do-ḃuailte	do-ḟóirṫe

286. The prefix ion- or in- denotes what *is proper or fit to be done*: as ion-ṁolta, fit to be praised, deserving of praise.

The prefix so- denotes *what is possible or easy to do*: as so-reubṫa, capable of being burst, easy to burst.

287. The prefix do- denotes *what is impossible or difficult to do*: as do-ḃuailte, incapable of being struck, hard to strike.

288. These derivative participles seem to be formed rather from *the genitive of the verbal noun* than from the participle: as faġáil, finding.

so-ḟaġála, easily found. do-ḟaġála, hard to find.

289. Declension of Verbal Noun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. Acc.	molaḋ	molta
Gen.	molta	molaḋ (molta)
Dat.	molaḋ	moltaiḃ
Nom. Acc.	bualaḋ	buailte
Gen.	buailte	bualaḋ (buailte)
Dat.	bualaḋ	buailtiḃ

290. Many verbal nouns are seldom or never used in the plural. As a rule the genitive singular of the verbal noun is identical in form with the past participle; but many verbal nouns are declined like ordinary nouns: nearly all those ending in **aċt**, **áil**, and aṁain belong to the 3rd declension—*e.g.*, **gaḃáil**, act of taking; gen., gaḃála: riṫ, running; gen. **reaṫa**: leanaṁain, act of following; gen. leanaṁna: **siuḃal**, act or walking; gen. siuḃail: fás, act of growing; gen. fáis, &c.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

291. The second conjugation comprises two classes of verbs—(1) **derived verbs in** iġ **or** uiġ; and (2) **syncopated verbs.**

292. Syncopated verbs are those in which the vowel in the final syllable of the stem is omitted when any termination *commencing with a vowel* is added: as labair, *speak*; labraim (not labairim), *I speak*. **Verbs of more than one syllable whose stem ends in** il, in, ir, is, ing, **belong to this class.**

VERBS IN iġ (-uiġ).

293. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	Past Participle.	V. Noun.	Meaning.
1.	bailiġ	baileóċad	bailiġṫe	bailiuġaḋ	gather
2.	ceannuiġ	ceannóċad	ceannuiġṫe	ceannaċ	buy

294. Except in the *Future* and *Conditional*, all verbs in iġ and uiġ are conjugated like buail (first conjugation), except that the t is aspirated in all terminations beginning with that letter. It is, therefore, necessary to give only the Future and Conditional in full.

295. Future.

SINGULAR.

1. baileóċad, I shall gather. ceannóċad, I shall buy
2. baileóċair, ceannóċair.
3. baileóċaiḋ sé, ceannóċaiḋ sé.

PLURAL.

1. baileóċamaoid (-ċamuid), ceannóċamaoid (-ċamuid).
2. baileóċaiḋ siḃ, ceannóċaiḋ siḃ.
3. baileóċaid, ceannóċaid.

Relative. ḃaileoċas. ċeannóċas.

Indef. & Pass. baileoċṫar ceannóċṫar.

296. **Conditional.**

SINGULAR.

1. ḃaileóċainn,	I would gather.	ċeannóċainn.
2. ḃaileóċṫá,		ċeannóċṫá.
3. ḃaileóċaḋ sé,		ċeannóċaḋ sé.

PLURAL.

1. ḃaileóċamaois, (-amuis)	ċeannóċamaois (-amuis).
2. ḃaileóċaḋ siḃ,	ċeannóċaḋ siḃ.
3. {ḃaileóċaidís / ḃaileóċadaois}	{ċeannóċaidís / ċeannóċadaois}

Indef. & Pass. ḃaileóċṫaoi ceannóċṫaoi

297. In early modern usage, when the stem ended in -uiġ, preceded by d, n, t, l, or s, these consonants were usually attenuated in the Future and Conditional: as árduiġ, *raise*, future áirdeóċaḋ; saluiġ, *soil*, future saileóċaḋ; but nowadays árdóċaḋ, salóċaḋ, &c., are the forms used.

Syncopated Verbs.

298. The personal endings of syncopated verbs vary somewhat according as the *consonant commencing* the last syllable of the stem is broad or slender.

Type (1). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a broad consonant,** as fuagair (fógair), *proclaim.*

Type (2). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a slender consonant,* as coigil, *spare.*

---

* A few of these take te in past participle; as osgail, *open,* osgailte; ceangail, *bind,* ceangailte. The parts of these verbs [258 c.] which are formed from the past participle will, of course, have slender terminations, *e.g.*, d'osgailteá, *you used to open.*

299. In early modern usage the Future is formed by lengthening the vowel sound of the last syllable of the stem from ai or i to eó. In the case of Type 1 the broad consonant which commences the final syllable of the stem must be made slender. Examples: innis, inneosad, *I shall tell;* díbir, díbeorair, *you will banish;* imir, imeoraidh sé, *he will play;* coigil, coigeolad, *I shall spare;* fuagair, fuaigeoraid, *they will proclaim;* d'fhuaigeoradh sé, *he would proclaim;* codail, coideolad, *I shall sleep;* choideolainn, *I would sleep.*

300. In the present-day usage the Future stem is formed as if the verb ended in ig or uig: by adding -óch in Type 1 and -eóch in Type 2.

301. **Principal Parts.**

	Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	V. Noun.
Type (1).	fuagair	fuagróchad	fuagartha	fuagra(dh)
302. Type (2).	coigil	coigleóchad	coigilte	coigilt

303. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SING.	1.	——	——
	2.	fuagair, proclaim	coigil, spare
	3.	fuagradh sé	coigleadh sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagramaois	coiglimís
	2.	fuagraidh	coiglidh
	3.	fuagraidís (-adaois)	coiglidís
Indef. & Passive.		fuagartar	coigiltear

INDICATIVE MOOD.

304. Present Tense.

SING.	1.	fuagraim, I proclaim	coiglim, I spare
	2.	fuagrair	coiglir
	3.	fuagrann sé[a]	coigleann[c] sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagramaoid	coiglimíd
	2.	fuagrann siḃ[b]	coigleann siḃ[d]
	3.	fuagraid	coiglid
Relative.		ḟuagras	ċoigleas
Indef & Passive.		fuagarṫar	coigiltear

305. Imperfect Tense.

SING.	1.	d'ḟuagrainn	ċoiġlinn
	2.	d'ḟuagarṫá	ċoigilteá
	3.	d'ḟuagraḋ sé	ċoigleaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	d'ḟuagramaois	ċoiglimís
	2.	d'ḟuagraḋ siḃ	ċoigleaḋ siḃ
	3.	d'ḟuagraidís (-daois)	ċoiglidís
Indef. & Passive.		fuagarṫaoi	coigiltí

306. Past Tense.

SING.	1.	d'ḟuagras	ċoiġleas
	2.	d'ḟuagrais	ċoiglis
	3.	d'ḟuagair sé	coigil sé
PLUR.	1.	d'ḟuagramar	ċoigleamar
	2.	d'ḟuagraḃar	ċoigleaḃar
	3.	d'ḟuagradar	ċoigleadar
Indefinite & Passive.		fuagraḋ	coigleaḋ

---

[a] [fuagraiḋ] [b] [fuagarṫaoi] [c] [coigliḋ] [d] [coigiltí]

307. Future Tense.

SINGULAR.

1.	fuagróċad	coigleóċad
2.	fuagróċair	coigleóċair
3.	fuagróċaiḋ sé	coigleóċaiḋ sé

PLURAL.

1.	fuagróċamaoid	coigleóċamaoid
2.	fuagróċaiḋ siḃ	coigleóċaiḋ siḃ
3.	fuagróċaid	coigleóċaid

Relative form. ḟuagróċas ċoigleóċas
Indefinite & Passive. fuagróċtar coigleóċtar

308. Conditional.

SING.	1.	d'ḟuagróċainn	ċoigleóċainn
	2.	d'ḟuagróċtá	ċoigleoċtá
	3.	d'ḟuagróċaḋ sé	ċoigleoċaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	d'ḟuagróċamaois	ċoigleoċamaois
	2.	d'ḟuagróċaḋ siḃ	ċoigleoċaḋ siḃ
	3.	d'ḟuagróċaidís	ċoigleóċaidís

Indef. & Pass. fuagróċtaoi coigleoċtaoi

309. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

SING.	1.	fuagrad	coiglead
	2.	fuagrair	coiglir
	3.	fuagraiḋ sé	coigliḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagramaoid	coiglimíd
	2.	fuagraiḋ siḃ	coigliḋ siḃ
	3.	fuagraid	coiglid

Indef. & Pass. fuagartar coigiltear

310. Past Tense.

SING.	1.	fuagrainn	coiglinn
	2.	fuagarṫá	coigilteá
	3.	fuagraḋ sé	coigleaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagramaois	coiglimís
	2.	fuagraḋ siḃ	coigleaḋ siḃ
	3.	fuagraidís	coiglidís

Indef. & Pass. fuagarṫaoi coigiltí

311. Past Participle and Participle of Necessity.

fuagarṫa coigilte

312. Compound Participles.

ion-ḟuagarṫa	ion-ċoigilte
so-ḟuagarṫa	so-ċoigilte
do-ḟuagarṫa	do-ċoigilte

313. Verbal Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
NOM. ACC.	fuagra(ḋ) (fuagairt)	fuagarṫa
GEN.	fuagarṫa	fuagra(ḋ) (fuagarṫa)
DAT.	fuagra(ḋ) (fuagairt)	fuagarṫaiḃ
NOM. ACC.	coigilt	—
GEN.	coigilte	—
DAT.	coigilt	—

314. In stems of Type (2) ending in r, the Participle is usually in the form earṫa, not irṫe, as díbir, *banish:* díbearṫa, *banished;* imir, *play;* imearṫa, *played.*

The endings formed on the participle [see par. 258 c.] follow this change, *e.g.*, Imperfect 2nd singular, díbearṫá; Present Passive, díbearṫar, &c.

315. General Rules for the formation of Verbal Noun.

(*a*) As a general rule verbs of the first conjugation form their verbal noun in aḋ, if the final consonant of the stem be broad; in eaḋ, if it be slender, as—

dún, shut	dúnaḋ
mill, destroy	milleaḋ
mol, praise	molaḋ
léiġ, read	léiġeaḋ.

(*b*) When the last vowel of the stem is i preceded by a broad vowel, the i is *usually* dropped in the formation of the verbal noun, as—

buail, strike	bualaḋ
dóiġ, burn	dóġaḋ
goin, wound	gonaḋ
brúiġ, bruise	brúġaḋ

The i is not dropped in—

caoin, lament	caoineaḋ
sgaoil, loose	sgaoileaḋ
smuain, reflect	smuaineaḋ

(*c*) Verbs of the second conjugation ending in in, il or ir generally form their verbal noun by adding t, as—

díbir, banish	díbirt
cosain, defend	cosaint (cosnaṁ)
labair, speak	labairt
coigil, spare	coigilt

(*d*) Derived verbs ending in uiġ form their verbal noun by dropping the i and adding aḋ; as, árduiġ, *raise*, árduġaḋ.

(*e*) Derived verbs in iġ form their verbal noun by inserting u between the i and ġ and then adding aḋ; as mínig, *explain*, míniuġaḋ.

316. There are, however, many exceptions to the above rules. The following classification of the modes of forming the verbal noun will be useful.

(*a*) Some verbs have their verbal noun like the stem, *e.g.*, fás, grow; ól, drink; riṫ, run; snáṁ, swim, &c.

(*b*) Some verbs form their verbal noun by dropping i of the stem, *e.g.*, cuir, put or send, cur; coisg, check, cosg; sguir, cease, sgur; guil, weep, gul, &c.

(*c*) Some verbs add aṁain or eaṁain to the stem to form their verbal noun, *e.g.*, caill, lose, cailleaṁain(t); creid, believe, creideaṁain(t); fan, stay, fanaṁain(t), lean, follow, leanaṁain(t); sgar, separate, sgaraṁ-ain(t), &c.

In the spoken language t is usually added to the classical termination -aṁain.

(*d*) A few add an or ean for the verbal noun, *e.g.*, leag, knock down, leagan; leig, let or permit, léigean; tréig, abandon, tréigean; teilg, throw or cast, teilgean.

(*e*) A few add aṁ or eaṁ, *e.g.*, seas, stand, seasaṁ; caiṫ, spend, consume, caiṫeaṁ; deun, do or make, deunaṁ (or deunaḋ); feiṫ, wait, feiṫeaṁ.

(*f*) A small number end in áil or ġail, as gaḃ, take, gaḃáil; faġ, find, faġáil; fág, leave, fágáil; fead, whistle, feadġail.

A fairly full list of irregular verbal nouns is given in Appendix V.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

317. In Old and Middle Irish the conjugation of verbs was very complex, but by degrees the varieties of conjugations became fewer, and nearly all verbs came to be conjugated in the same way. At the commencement of the modern period (*i.e.*, about the end of the sixteenth century) about fifteen verbs in common use retained their old forms. These are now classed as irregular. Excepting occasional survivals of older forms, all the other verbs had by this time become regular; so that from the stem of the verb it was possible in nearly every instance to tell all its forms except the *verbal noun*.

During the modern period even the irregular verbs have, through the operation of analogy, shown a tendency to adopt the forms of the modern regular conjugations.

táim, I AM.

318. The correct spelling of this verb is undoubtedly atáim, but long since it has lost its initial a, except when it occurs in the middle of a sentence, where it usually has a relative force. Some persons, by confounding this initial a, which really belongs to the verb, with the *modern* relative particle a, write the a separated from the tá: as a tá instead of atá.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

319. —	bímís, let us be
bí, be thou	bíḋíḋ, let you be
bíoḋ sé, let him be	bídís. let them be

Impersonal Passive or **Indefinite,** bíṫear

The **negative particle** is ná.

All the persons, except the 2nd sing., are often written as if formed from the spurious stem bíḋ: *e.g.*, bíḋeaḋ sé.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

320. Present Tense—Absolute.

SYNTHETIC FORM.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
táim, I am	támaoid, we are
táir,* thou art	tá siḃ (táṫaoi), you are
tá sé, he is	táid, they are

Indefinite, táṫar

Present Tense (Analytic Form).

tá mé, I am	tá sinn, we are
tá tú, thou art	tá siḃ, you are
tá sé, he is	tá siad, they are

321. Present Tense—Dependent.

fuilim	fuilmíd
fuilir	fuil siḃ
fuil sé	fuilid

Indefinite, fuiltear

---

* The early modern form, viz., taoi, is still used in Munster, *e.g* Cionnus taoi? *How are you?*

Negatively.	Interrogatively.	Neg. Interrog
I am not, &c.	Am I, &c.	Am I not, &c.
ní ḟuilim	an bḟuilim	naċ bḟuilim
ní ḟuilir	an bḟuilir	naċ bḟuilir
ní ḟuil sé	an bḟuil sé	naċ bḟuil sé
ní ḟuilmíd	an bḟuilmíd	naċ bḟuilmíd
ní ḟuil siḃ	an bḟuil siḃ	naċ bḟuil siḃ
ní ḟuilid	an bḟuilid	naċ bḟuilid

The analytic forms are like those given above; as, ní ḟuil siad, naċ bḟuil tú, &c.

322. Habitual Present.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
bím (biḋim)	bímíd (biḋmid)
bír (biḋir)	bíonn siḃ, bíṫí
bíonn sé (bíḋ sé, biḋeann sé)	bíd (biḋid)

Negatively, ní bím, &c. **Interrogatively,** an mbím, &c.

Neg. Interrog., naċ mbím, &c.

Relative form bíos (biḋeas).

Indefinite, bíṫear

323. Imperfect Tense (*I used to be*).

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
do bínn	(do biḋinn)	do bímís (biḋmís)
,, bíṫeá	(,, biḋṫeá)	,, bíoḋ siḃ
,, bíoḋ sé	(,, biḋeaḋ sé)	,, bídís (biḋdís)

Indefinite, bíṫí

Negatively, ní bínn

Interrogatively, an mbínn?

Neg. interrog. naċ mbínn?

324. **Past Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.

do ḃíos (ḃiḋeas)	do ḃíomar (ḃiḋeamar)
,, ḃís (ḃiḋis)	,, ḃíoḃar (ḃiḋeaḃar)
,, ḃí sé	,, ḃíodar, ḃiḋeadar

Indefinite, ḃíṫeas

325. DEPENDENT.

raḃas	raḃamar
raḃais	raḃaḃar
raiḃ sé	raḃadar

Indefinite, raḃṫas

Negative, ní raḃas, ní raḃais, ní raiḃ sé, &c.

Interrogatively (*Was I? &c.*).

an raḃas an raḃais an raiḃ sé an raḃamar, &c.

Neg. interrog. (*Was I not? &c.*).

naċ raḃas naċ raḃais naċ raiḃ sé, &c.

326. **Future Tense.**

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
béad, bead (béiḋead)	béimid, beimíd (béiḋmíd)
béir, beir (béiḋir)	béiḋ siḃ, béiṫí
béiḋ sé	béid, beid (béiḋid)

Relative Form, ḃias (ḃéiḋeas)
Indefinite, béiṫear, béiḋfear
Negatively, ní ḃéad
Interrog., an mbéad?
Neg. interrog., naċ mbéad?

327. Secondary Future or Conditional.

do ḃéinn (ḃéiḋinn)	ḃéimís (ḃéiḋmís)
,, ḃéiṫeá (ḃéiḋṫeá)	ḃéaḋ, ḃiaḋ, (ḃéiḋeaḋ) siḃ
,, ḃéaḋ, ḃiaḋ, (ḃéiḋeaḋ) sé	ḃéidís (ḃéiḋdís)

Indefinite,	ḃéiṫí
Negative,	ní ḃéinn
Interrog.,	an mbéinn
Neg. interrog.,	naċ mbéinn

328. THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present Tense.

go raḃad	go raḃmuid
go raḃair	go raiḃ siḃ (raḃṫaoi)
go raiḃ sé	go raḃaid

The negative particle for this tense is ná: as, ná raiḃ maiṫ agat. No thanks to you.

329. Past Tense.

go mbínn	go mbímís
go mbíṫeá	go mbíoḋ siḃ
go mbíoḋ sé	go mbídís

The **negative particle** is nár.

Participle of Necessity.

beiṫte.

Verbal Noun.

beiṫ, to be.

330. Phrases containing the Verb Noun.

Is féidir liom (a)* beiṫ	I can be, &c.
Ní féidir liom (a) beiṫ	I cannot be, &c.
Tig leat (a) beiṫ	You can be, &c.
Ní ṫig leat (a) beiṫ	You cannot be, &c
Caiṫfiḋ sé beiṫ	He must be, &c.
Caiṫfiḋ mé beiṫ	I must be, &c.
Ní fuláir go raiḃ tú Is cosṁail go raiḃ tú Níor ḃ'ḟéidir nó ḃí tú	You must have been, &c.
Ní cosṁail go raiḃ mé Ní fuláir naċ raiḃ mé	I must not have been, &c.
Is cóir dom (a) beiṫ	I ought to be.
Ní cóir duit (a) beiṫ	You ought not to be.
Buḋ ċóir dó beiṫ	He ought to have been.
Níor ċóir dom (a) beiṫ	I ought not to have been.
Buḋ ṁaiṫ liom (a) beiṫ ann	I wish I were there.
Buḋ ṁaiṫ liom go raiḃ mé ann	I wish I had been there.
Tá sé le beiṫ ann	He is to be there.

331. The forms fuilim **and** rabas **are used—**

(1) After the particles ní, not; cá, where? an (or a), whether? go, that; and naċ, that (conj.)...not.

---

* This a is usually heard in the spoken language.

(2) After the relative particle a, when it is preceded by a preposition, after the relative a when it means "what," "all that," "all which," and after the negative relative nac, who...not, which...not. Cá d-fuil sé? Where is it? Ní fuil a fios agam. I don't know. Cionnas tá tú? How are you? How do you do? Deir sé go bfuil sé slán. He says that he is well. Sin é an fear nac d-fuil ag obair. That is the man who is not working. Dubairt sé liom nac raib sé ann. He told me he was not there.

332. It is a very common practice to eclipse fuil after the negative ní, not; as, ní bfuil sé, he is not.

For the use of the Relative Form refer to pars. 554-560.

THE ASSERTIVE VERB is.

333. The position of a verb in an Irish sentence is at the very beginning; hence, when a word other than the verb is to be brought into prominence, the important word is to be placed in the most prominent position—viz., at the beginning of the sentence, under cover of an *unemphatic impersonal verb*. There is no stress on the verb so used; it merely denotes that prominence is given to some idea in the sentence other than that contained in the verb. There is a similar expedient adopted in English: thus, "He was speaking of you," and, "It

it is of you he was speaking." In Irish there is a special verb for this purpose, and of this verb there are forms to be used in principal clauses and forms to be used in dependent clauses—*e.g.*:

Is mise an fear. I am the man.

Deirim gur ab é Seaġán an fear. I say John is the man.

334. Forms of the Assertive Verb.

(*a*) *In Principal Sentences.*

Present Tense, is. **Relative,** is or as.

Past Tense, ba, baḋ, or buḋ.

[Future Simple, buḋ. **Relative,** bus].

Secondary Future or **Conditional,** baḋ, ba, buḋ.

Subjunctive, ab; sometimes ba.

335. Present Tense.

is mé, I am; or, it is I.
is tú, thou art, it is you.
is é, he is, it is he.
is í, she is, it is she.
is sinn, we are, it is we.
is siḃ, you are, it is you.
is iad, they are, it is they.

336. Past Tense and Conditional.

ba mé, I was, it was I, I would be.
ba ṫú, thou wast, &c.
b' é, he was, &c.
b' í, she was, &c.
ba sinn, we were, &c.
ba siḃ, you were, &c.
b' iad, they were, &c.

Dúḃ or ḃuṙ is never used in the spoken language, and scarcely ever in writing, except when a superlative adjective or adverb occurs in a sentence, the verbs of which are in the Future Tense.

337. In the Present Tense the verb is is omitted after all particles except má, if: as, Is mé an fear. I am the man; Ní mé an fear. I am not the man.

338. In the Past Tense ba is usually omitted after particles when the word following ba begins with a consonant: as, Ar ṁaiṫ leat an áit? Did you like the place? Nár ḃeag an luaċ é? Was it not a small price? Ba is not usually omitted when the following word begins with a vowel or f, but the a is elided: as, Níor ḃ' é sin an sagart. That was not the priest. Notice that the word immediately after ba or baḋ, even when ba or baḋ is understood, is usually aspirated when possible.

(b) In Dependent Sentences.

339. Present Tense.—Ab is used instead of is after gur, meaning "that"; as, measaim gur ab é sin an fear. I think that is the man. Before a consonant ab is usually omitted; as, deir sé gur mise an fear. He says that I am the man. Ab is always omitted after naċ, that...not. Saoilim naċ é sin an rí. I think that is not the king.

340. Past Tense.—The word ba or baḋ becomes ḃ' in dependent sentences and is usually joined to the

particle which precedes it. When the following word begins with a consonant the ḃ' is usually omitted. Measaim gurḃ é seo an teaċ. I think that this was the house; measann sé nár ṁaiṫ le Niall ḃeiṫ annso. He thinks that Niall did not like to be here. An measann tú gur ṁaiṫ an sgeul é? Do you think that it was a good story?

341. Conditional.—In dependent sentences ba or baḋ becomes mba. Saoilim go mba ṁaiṫ leis dul leat. I think he would like to go with you. Deir sé naċ mba ṁaiṫ leis. He says that he would not like. In the spoken language the tendency is to use the past tense forms in dependent sentences; hence Irish speakers would say gur ṁaiṫ in the above sentence instead of go mba ṁaiṫ, and nár ṁaiṫ instead of naċ mba ṁaiṫ.

The *Future* is never used in dependent sentences in the spoken language.

beir, BEAR or CARRY.

342. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
beir	beurfaḋ	beirṫe	breiṫ

This verb is conjugated like buail, except in the Past, Future and Conditional.

343. Past Tense.

rugas, rugais, &c., like ṁolas (par. 264).

The prefixes do and ro were not used before this Past Tense in early usage and not generally in present-day usage.

344. **Future.**

beurfaḋ, beurfair, &c., like molfaḋ (par. 265).

In early modern usage there was no f in this Tense, or in the Conditional. The rule was that when a short vowel in the Present became long in the Future stem no f was added. This rule is still observed in the Futures ending in -óċaḋ or -eoċaḋ.

Conditional.

ḃeurfainn, &c., like ṁolfainn (par. 266).

Verbal Noun breiṫ, gen. breiṫe or beirṫe.

345. This verb is of very frequent use in the idiom "beir ar"; *lay hold on. catch, overtake*; *e.g.*, rugaḋ orm, I was caught. Ní ḟuil breiṫ air. There is no laying hold on him (or it).

ṪABAIR, GIVE or BRING.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
tabair	beurfaḋ	tabarṫa	tabairt
	tiubraḋ	tugṫa	

346. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	—	tabramaois, tugamaois (tabram)
2.	tabair	tabraiḋ
3.	tabraḋ or tugaḋ sé	tabraidís, tugaidís (or -adaois)

Indefinite & Passive, tabarṫar, tugṫar.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

347. Present Tense.

		ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
SING.	1.	(do-) ḃeirim	taḃraim
	2.	(do-) ḃeirir	taḃrair,
	3.	(do-) ḃeir sé	taḃrann sé
PLUR.	1.	(do-) ḃeirimíd	taḃramaoid
	2.	(do-) ḃeirṫí	taḃarṫaoi
	3.	(do-) ḃeirid	taḃraid

tugaim, &c. (like molaim), may be used in both constructions.

348. By the "Dependent Form" of the Verb we mean that form which is used after the following Particles, viz., ní, not; an, whether; naċ, whether... not; or who, which or that...not; go, that; cá, where; muna, unless; dá, if; and the relative when governed by a preposition.

349. Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(do-)ḃeirinn	taḃrainn
(do-)ḃeirṫeá	&c., like d'ḟuagrainn
&c., like ḃuailinn (262)	(305)

Or, ṫugainn, ṫugṫá, &c., for both *absolute* and *dependent* constructions.

Past Tense.

350. The Past Tense has only one form: ṫugas, ṫugais, &c., like ṁolas (264).

In early usage this Past Tense did not take do or ro, as, go d-tugas, "that I gave." In present-day usage this peculiarity is sometimes adhered to and sometimes not.

351. **Future Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(do-)ḃeurfad	tiuḃrad, tioḃrad
&c.,	tiuḃrair, tioḃrair
like molfad (265)	tiuḃraiḋ sé
	&c.

352. **Conditional.**

(do-)ḃeurfainn	tiuḃrainn, tioḃrainn
&c.	tiuḃarṫá, tioḃarṫá
like ṁolfainn (266)	&c.

taḃarfainn, &c., may be used in both constructions.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

This Mood occurs only in dependent construction.

353. Present—tugad, tugair, tugaiḋ sé, &c., or taḃrad, taḃrair, &c.

354. Past—tugainn, &c., like molainn (268).

Verbal Noun.

taḃairt, gen. taḃarṫa.

355. abair, SAY.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
abair	déarfad / abróċad	ráiḋte	ráḋ

356. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1.	——	abramaoís (abram)
2.	abair	abraiḋ
3.	abraḋ sé	abraidís, abradaois

357. **Present Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	(a)deirim	abraim
2.	(a)deirir	abrair
3.	(a)deir sé	abrann sé (abair)
1.	(a)deirimíd	abramaoid
2.	(a)deirṫí	abarṫaoi
3.	(a)deirid	abraid

Indef. & Passive, (a)deirṫear abarṫar

The initial a of adeirim, &c., is now usually dropped. The same remark holds for the other tenses. The d of deirim, &c., is not usually aspirated by a foregoing particle. The absolute and dependent constructions are sometimes confused in spoken usage.

358. **Imperfect Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	adeirinn	abrainn
2.	adeirṫeá	abarṫá
3.	adeireaḋ sé	abraḋ sé
	&c.	&c.

359. **Past Tense.**

aduḃras, aduḃairt	duḃras, duḃairt
aduḃrais	duḃrais
aduḃairt sé	duḃairt sé
aduḃramar	duḃramar
aduḃraḃar	duḃraḃar
aduḃradar	duḃradar

Indefinite & Passive, (a)duḃraḋ or (a)duḃarṫas

360. **Future Tense.**

deurfad	abróċad
deurfair	abróċair
deurfaiḋ sé	abróċaiḋ sé
&c.	&c.

In the spoken language the absolute and dependent forms are often confused.

361. **Conditional.**

deurfainn	abróċainn
deurfá	abróċṫá
deurfaḋ sé	abróċaḋ sé
&c.	&c.

In spoken language the two constructions are often confused.

362. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present,	abrad,	abrair,	abraiḋ sé, &c.
Past,	abrainn,	abarṫá,	abraḋ sé, &c.

363. **Participles.**

ráiḋte, ion-ráiḋte, do-ráiḋte, so-ráiḋte.

Verbal Noun.

ráḋ or ráḋa, gen. sing. and nom. plur. ráiḋte

gaḃ, TAKE.

364. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
gaḃ	geaḃad geoḃad	gaḃṫa	gaḃáil

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

365. Future.

geoḃad, geoḃair, geoḃaiḋ sé, geoḃamaoid, &c.

366. Conditional.

ġeoḃainn, ġeoḃṫá, ġeoḃaḋ sé, ġeoḃamaois, &c.

367. In the spoken language the Future is often made gaḃfad, &c., and the Conditional, ġaḃfainn, as in regular verbs.

Verbal Noun.

gaḃáil or gaḃál, gen. sing. and nom. plural gaḃála.

faġ, GET, FIND.

368. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
faġ	ġeoḃad ġeaḃad	faġta	faġáil

369. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1.	—	faġamaois
2.	faġ	faġaiḋ
3.	faġaḋ sé	faġaidís

INDICATIVE MOOD.

370 Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
	(do-) ġeiḃim	faġaim
	„ ġeiḃir	faġair
ġeiḃeann	„ ġeiḃ sé	faġann sé
	„ ġeiḃmíd	faġamaoid
	„ ġeiḃtí	faġann sib
	„ ġeiḃid	faġaid

Indef. & Passive, (do-) ġeiḃtear, faġtar.

In spoken usage faġaim, &c., is used in both dependent and absolute constructions.

In the Passive faġtar, faiġtear and faċtar are used.

371. Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(do-) ġeiḃinn	faġainn
„ ġeiḃteá	faġtá
&c.	&c.

Indef. & Passive, ġeiḃtí, faġtaoi, faiġtí.

Spoken usage, Absolute, ġeiḃinn or faġainn, &c.

372. Past Tense.

This Tense has only one form for both absolute and dependent constructions. The prefixes do and ro are not used with it.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. fuaras	fuaramar
2. fuarais	fuarabar
3. fuair sé	fuaradar

Indefinite & Passive, fríṫ, fuarṫas or fuaraḋ

In spoken usage fríṫ often becomes fríṫeaḋ

373. Future Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	ġeoḃad, ġeaḃad	ḃfuiġead or ḃfaiġead
2.	ġeoḃair, &c.	ḃfuiġir &c.
3.	ġeoḃaiḋ sé	ḃfuiġiḋ sé
1.	ġeoḃamaoid	ḃfuiġmíd
2.	ġeoḃaiḋ siḃ	ḃfuiġiḋ siḃ
3.	ġeoḃaid	ḃfuiġid
Indef. & Passive,	ġeoḃṫar / ġeaḃṫar	fuiġṫear / faiġṫear

374. Conditional.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
ġeóḃainn or ġeaḃainn	ḃfuiġinn or ḃfaiġinn
ġeóḃṫá, &c.	ḃfuiġṫeá, &c.
ġeóḃaḋ sé	ḃfuiġeaḋ sé
ġeóḃamaois	ḃfuiġmís
ġeóḃaḋ siḃ	ḃfuiġeaḋ siḃ
ġeóḃaidís	ḃfuiġidís
Indef. & Passive, ġeóḃṫaoi / ġeaḃṫaoi	fuiġṫí / faiġṫí

375. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present, faġad, faġair, faġaiḋ sé, faġamaoid, &c.
Past, faġainn, faġṫá, faġaḋ sé, &c.

376. Participle.

faġṫa, faiġṫe or faċṫa.

The derivative participles of this verb are usually formed from the genitive of the verbal noun.

ion-ḟaġála, so-ḟaġála, do-ḟaġála.

377. deun, DO, MAKE.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
deun	deunfad	deunta	deunaṁ

378. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1.	—	deunamaois
2.	deun	deunaiḋ
3.	deunaḋ sé	deunaidís

Indef. & Passive, deuntar.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

379. Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	(do-) ġním (ġniḋim)	deunaim
2.	„ ġnír &c.	deunair
3.	„ ġní sé or ġníonn sé	deunann sé
1.	„ ġnímíd	deunamaoid
2.	„ ġníṫí	deunann sibh
3.	„ ġníd	deunaid

Relative, ġníos, ġniḋeas

Indef. & Passive, ġníṫear deuntar

In present-day usage deunaim, &c., are very frequently used in the absolute construction.

380. **Imperfect Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
do-ġnínn, ġníḋinn	deunainn
„ ġníṫeá, &c.	deuntá
„ ġníoḋ sé	deunaḋ sé
„ ġnímís	deunamaoís
„ ġníoḋ siḃ	deunaḋ siḃ
„ ġnídís	deunaidís
Indef. & Passive, do-ġníṫí	deuntaoi

381. **Past Tense.**

do-rinneas	deárnas
„ rinnis	deárnais
„ rinne sé	deárna sé
„ rinneamar	deárnamar
„ rinneaḃar	deárnaḃar
„ rinneadar	deárnadar
Indef & Passive, do-rinneaḋ	deárnaḋ

In Munster dialect ḋeineas, ḋeinis, ḋein sé, ḋeineamar, ḋeineaḃar, and ḋeineadar are used as the Past Tense in *both* absolute and dependent constructions.

382. **Future Tense.**

ABSOLUTE AND DEPENDENT.

deunfad	deunfamaoid
deunfair	deunfaiḋ siḃ
deunfaiḋ sé	deunfaid

Indef. & Passive, deunfar

383. **Conditional.**

ḋeunfainn	ḋeunfamaoís
ḋeunfá	ḋeunfaḋ siḃ
ḋeunfaḋ sé	ḋeunfaidís

Indef. & Passive, deunfaiḋe

384. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

deunad deunair deunaiḋ sé deunamaoid, &c.

Past.

deunainn deuntá deunaḋ sé deunamaois, &c.

Participles.

deunta ion-deunta so-ḋeunta do-ḋeunta

Verbal Noun.

deunaṁ (deunaḋ) gen. deunta

385. feic, SEE.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
feic	ċífead / feicfead	feicte	feicsint

386. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1.	—	feicimís (feiceam)
2.	feic	feiciḋ
3.	feiceaḋ sé	feicidís

387. The imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plural are hardly ever found; for we rarely command or ask a person to "see" anything, except in the sense of "look at" it. In Irish a distinct verb is always used in the sense of "look at," such as feuċ, dearc, breaṫnuiġ, &c. The verb feuċ must not be confounded with feic; it is a distinct verb, and has a complete and regular conjugation.

388. In early modern Irish faic was the stem used in the imperative and in the dependent construction throughout the entire verb,

389. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	do-ċím (ċiḋim)	feicim
2.	do-ċír, &c.	feicir
3.	do-ċí sé, ċíonn se	feiceann sé
1.	do-ċímíd	feicimíd
2.	do-ċíṫí	feiceann siḃ
3.	do-ċíd	feicid
Indef. & Passive,	do-ċítear / do-ċíṫear	feicṫear

390. The prefix do-, now usually dropped, is an altered form of the old prefix at—*e.g.*, atċím. This form survives in the spoken language only in the Ulster form, 'tím or tiḋim, &c.

391. Imperfect Tense.

do-ċínn, ċiḋinn	feicinn
do-ċíṫeá, &c.	feicṫeá
do-ċíoḋ sé	feiceaḋ sé
do-ċímís	feicimís
do-ċíoḋ siḃ	feiceaḋ siḃ
do-ċídís	feicidís

In spoken language feicinn, &c., is used in both Absolute and Dependent constructions.

Ulster usage, tiḋeann, tiḋṫeá, &c.

392. **Past Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1.	ċonnac / ċonnacas	(ċonnarcas)	facas / faca	feacas / feaca
2.	ċonnacais	(ċonnarcais)	facais	feacais
3.	ċonnaic sé	(ċonnairc sé)	faca sé	feaca sé
1.	ċonncamar	[ċonnarcamar]	facamar	feacamar
2.	ċonncaḃar	[ċonnarcaḃar]	facaḃar	feacaḃar
3.	ċonncadar	[ċonnarcadar]	facadar	feacadar

Indef. & Passive, conncas facas or facṫas

The older spelling was atċonnac and atċonnairc, &c. The t is still preserved in the Ulster dialect: ṫanaic me, &c., I saw.

393. **Future Tense.**

(do-)ċífead, ċiófead,	feicfead,
(do-)ċífir, ċiófir,	feicfir,
&c.	&c.

Indefinite & Passive, ċífear feicfear

394. **Conditional.**

(do-)ċífinn, ċiófinn,	feicfinn,
&c.	&c.

In the Future and Conditional feicfead, &c., and feicfinn, &c., can be used in both constructions.

395. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, feicead, feicir, feiciḋ sé, &c.

Past, feicinn, feicteá, feiceaḋ sé, &c.

Participle, feicte.

396. **Verbal Noun.**

feicsin or feicsinc, gen. feicseana.

From the genitive of the verbal noun the **compound participles** are formed: viz., in-feicseana, so-feicseana, do-feicseana.

397. Clois or Cluin, HEAR.

These two verbs are quite regular except in the Past Tense.

In old writings the particle ac or do- is found prefixed to all the tenses in the absolute construction, but this particle is now dropped.

398. **Past Tense.**

ċualas, ċuala	ċualamar
ċualais	ċualabar
ċuala sé	ċualadar

Verbal Nouns.

clos or cloisint (or more modern cluinsint or cloistin).

ταr, COME.

399. IMPERATIVE.

SING.	1. —	PLUR.	tigimís (tigeam)
	2. tar		tigiḋ
	3. tigeaḋ (tagaḋ) sé		tigidís

INDICATIVE MOOD.

400. **Present Tense.**

1. tigim	tigimid
2. tigir	tigṫí
3. tig sé	tigid

Relative (wanting).

Indefinite, tigṫear.

The Present Tense has also the forms tagaim or teagaim inflected regularly.

401. **Imperfect Tense.**

ṫiginn, ṫagainn, or ṫeagainn, regularly.

402. **Past Tense.**

ṫángas, ṫánag	ṫángamar
ṫángais	ṫángaḃar
ṫáinig sé	ṫángadar

403. **Indefinite,** tángas.

The ng in this Tense is not sounded like ng in long, *a ship*, but with a helping vowel between them—*e.g.*, 2nd pers. sing.—is pronounced as if written ṫánagais; but in Munster the g is silent except in the 3rd pers. sing.—*e.g.*, ṫángas is pronounced *haw-nuss*.

404. Future Tense, tiocfad, &c., **inflected regularly;** also spelled tiucfad, &c.

Relative, ṫiocfas

Conditional, ṫiocfainn, &c., **inflected regularly.**

405. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, tigead, tagad, or teagad, **inflected regularly.**

Past, tiginn, tagainn, or teagainn, **inflected regularly.**

406. Verbal Noun, teaċt (or tioḋaċt, tiḋeaċt).

Participle, teagṫa or tagṫa.

407. téiġ, GO.

N.B.—The present stem is also spelled téiḋ, but téiġ **is preferable,** as it better represents the older form, tiag or téig.

408. IMPERATIVE.

1.	—	téiġimís (téiġeam)
2.	téiġ	téiġiḋ
3.	téiġeaḋ sé	téiġidís

409. In the Imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plur. other verbs are now usually substituted, such as gaḃ, imṫiġ, téirig. The use of téirig, plur. téirigiḋ, seems to be confined to these two forms; imṫiġ **has a** full, regular conjugation.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

410. **Present.**

1. téiġim (téiḋim)	1. téiġimíd
2. téiġir &c.	2. téiġṫí
3. téiġ sé, téiġeann sé	3. téiġid

Indefinite, téiġtear

Imperfect Tense.

ṫéiġinn (or ṫéiḋinn), &c., regularly.

411. Past Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	ċuaḋas	deaċas
2.	ċuaḋais	deaċais
3.	ċuaiḋ sé	deaċaiḋ sé
1.	ċuaḋamar	deaċamar
2.	ċuaḋaḃar	deaċaḃar
3.	ċuaḋadar	deaċadar
Indefinite,	ċuaḋṫas	deaċas

In Munster ċuaḋas, &c., is used in the dependent construction, as níor ċuaiḋ sé, he did not go.

412. Future.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	raċad, raġad	raċamaoid, raġamaoid
2.	raċair, raġair	raċaiḋ siḃ, raġaiḋ siḃ
3.	raċaiḋ sé, raġaiḋ sé	raċaid, raġaid

Relative, raċas, raġas.

Indefinite, raċṫar, raġṫar.

413. Conditional.

raċainn or raġainn, &c., regularly.

The Future and Conditional are sometimes spelled raċfad, &c., and raċfainn, &c.

414. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, téigead, téigir, téigiḋ sé, &c.
Past, téiginn, téigteá, téigeaḋ sé, &c.

415. **Verbal Noun.**

'dul, gen. dola (sometimes dulta).

Participle of Necessity.

dulta (as, ní dulta ḋó, *he ought not to go*).

Derivative Participles.

ion-dola, so-ḋola, do-ḋola.

416. iṫ, EAT.

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

Principal Parts.

Imper.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
iṫ	íosad	iṫte	iṫe

417. **Future Tense.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	íosad (íosfad)	íosamaoid
2.	íosair, &c.	íosaiḋ siḃ
3.	íosaiḋ sé	íosaid

Relative, íosas (íosfas).

Indefinite & Passive, íostar.

418. **Conditional.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	íosainn (íosfainn)	íosamaois
2.	íostá, &c.	íosaḋ siḃ
3.	íosaḋ sé	íosaidís

419. As well as the regular Past Tense, d'iṫeas, &c., there is another Past Tense, viz., duaḃas, in use.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. duaḃas	duaḃamar
2. duaḃais	duaḃaḃar
3. duaiḃ sé	duaḃadar

Riġim, I REACH.

420. This verb is nearly obsolete, its place being taken by the regular verbs sroiċim and sroisim.

Its Past Tense is inflected like ṫánag.

1. rángas, ránag	rángamar
2. rángais	rángaḃar
3. ráinig sé	rángadar

421. **Verbal Noun.**

roċtain or riaċtain.

Riġim has a special usage in the phrase riġim a leas, "*I need,*" (whence, riaċtanas, need, necessity: riaċtanaċ, necessary: from the verbal noun.)

marḃaim or marḃuiġim, I KILL.

422. This verb is quite regular except in Future and Conditional.

Future, maróḃad, marḃóċad, maireóḃad, mairḃeóċad or muirḃfead (with usual terminations).

Conditional, ṁaróḃainn, ṁarḃóċainn, ṁaireoḃainn, ṁairḃeóċainn or ṁuirḃfinn, &c., &c.

Verbal Noun.

marḃaḋ or marḃuġaḋ, to kill or killing.

SOME DEFECTIVE VERBS.

423. ᴀꞃ, quoth, say or said. This verb is used only when the exact words of the speaker are given. (It corresponds exactly with the Latin "*inquit.*") It is frequently written ᴀꞃꞅᴀ or ᴀꞃꞅ, as ᴀꞃꞅᴀ ṁiꞅe, said I. When the definite article immediately follows this latter form the ꞅ is often joined to the article, as, ᴀꞃꞅ ᴀn ꝼeᴀꞃ or ᴀꞃ ꞅᴀn ꝼeᴀꞃ, says the man. "Cia ṫú ꝼéin?" ᴀꞃ ꞅeiꞅeᴀn. "Who are you?" said he.

When the exact words of the speaker are not given translate "says" by ꝺeiꞃ, and "said" by ꝺuḃᴀiꞃꞇ. When the word "*that*" is understood after the English verb "*say*" ᵹo (or nᴀċ if "*not*" follows) *must be expressed in Irish.*

424. ꝺᴀꞃ, It seems or it seemed. This verb is always followed by the preposition le: as, ꝺᴀꞃ liom, it seems to me, methinks; or, it seemed to me, methought. ꝺᴀꞃ leᴀꞇ. It seems to you. ꝺᴀꞃ leiꞅ ᴀn ḃꝼeᴀꞃ. It seemed to the man.

425. ꝼeᴀꝺᴀꞃ, I know, I knew. This verb is nearly always used negatively or interrogatively, and although really a past tense has a present meaning as well as a

past. Ní ḟeadar. I do, or did, not know. Ní ḟeadair sé. He does not know, or he did not know.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. feadar	1. feadramar
2. feadrair (-ir)	2. feadrabar
3. feadair sé	3. feadradar

N.B.—The forms just given are those used in the spoken language, the literary forms are: feadar, feadair tú, feadair sé, feadamar, feadabar, and feadadar.

426. Ṫárla, **There came to pass, it happened** or **happened to be.** It is also used to express the meeting of one person with another.

427. D'ḟóbair, **"It all but happened."** *E.g.*, d'ḟóbair ḋam tuitim, It all but happened to me to fall, I had like to fall, I had well nigh fallen. The same meaning is expressed by d'ḟóbair go dtuitfinn.

428 Feudaim, **I can,** is regular in all its tenses, but it has no imperative mood.

CHAPTER VI.

The Adverb.

429. There are not many simple adverbs in Irish, the greater number of adverbs being made up of two or more words. **Almost every Irish adjective may be-**

come an adverb by having the particle "ᵹo" prefixed to it: as, maiṫ, good; ᵹo maiṫ, well; uṁal, humble; ᵹo h-uṁal, humbly.

430. This ᵹo is really the preposition ᵹo* with its meaning of "with." (Do not confound this word with ᵹo meaning "*to*," they are two distinct prepositions). Of course this particle has now lost its original meaning in the case of most adverbs.

431. Adverbs may be compared; their comparative and superlative degrees are, however, those of the adjectives from which they are derived; the particle ᵹo is not used before the comparative or superlative.

432. It may be well to remark here that when an adjective begins with a vowel ᵹo prefixes h, as ᵹo h-annaṁ, seldom.

433. The following list may now be regarded as simple adverbs although many of them are disguised compounds.

amaċ	out (used *only* after a verb of motion).
amuiᵹ	outside, out; never used after a verb of motion. He is out, tá ré amuiᵹ. He is standing outside the door, tá ré 'na ṡearaṁ taoḃ amuiᵹ de 'n doraр.

* This preposition is now used only in a few phrases; as míle ᵹo leiṫ, a mile and (*with*) a half: ṗlat ᵹo leiṫ, a yard and a half: bliaḋain ᵹo leiṫ ó ṡoin, a year and a half ago.

i muḋa (amuḋa)	out (mistaken). Tá sé amuḋa go mór. He is greatly mistaken. ag dul i muḋa, going astray.
aṁáin	alone, only.
indiu (andiu)	to-day.
indé (ané)	yesterday.
i mbáraċ (amáraċ)	to-morrow.
cionnus	how.
aṁlaiḋ	thus: like this.
feasda	henceforth, in future; also, just now, at once, as, imṫiġ feasda, be off with you this moment.
aṁail mar	as, like.
go h-annaṁ	seldom.
go fóill	awhile, yet.
ċeana	already, before, previously.
nuair (an uair)	when (never used interrogatively). *When*, used interrogatively, is translated by ca h-uair, caṫain or casoin.
cá	where (interrogative).
	mar a or i n-áit a, where (when not interrog.)
coṁ	as; as white as, coṁ bán le (agus). For use of le and agus see par. 154.
anois	now.
fós	yet.

ní	not. *In Ulster* ċa ıs used for *not*; it eclipses consonants and prefixes n to vowels. Ċan is used before ḟuıl and ır.
aréır	last night.
arís	again.
ısteaċ	in (used *only* after a verb of motion)
ıstıġ	in, inside: the opposite to amuıġ.

434. It may be useful to remark here that the words, ınnıu, to-day; ınné, yesterday; ı mbáraċ (or amáraċ), to-morrow; aréır, last night, **can be used only as adverbs.** He came to-day. Ṫáınıġ sé ınnıu. He went away yesterday. D' ımṫıġ sé ınné. When the English words are *nouns* we must use an lá (or an oıḋċe) before ınnıu, ınné, &c. Yesterday was fine. Ḃí an lá ınné breáġ. To-morrow will be wet. Ḃéıḋ an lá ı mbáraċ fluıċ.

Up and Down.

435. **Up.**

- suas, upwards, **motion upwards** from the place where the speaker is.
- aníos, upwards, **motion up from below** to the place where the speaker is.
- ṫuas (also spelled suas), up, **rest above** the place where the speaker is.
- aníos (aḃus),* up, **rest** where the speaker is.

* This form is used in Ulster and North Connaught, but generally this word is used only for rest on this side of a room, river, &c., or here, where we are.

Down.

- ṡíoṡ, downwards, **motion down** from where the speaker is.
- anuaṡ, downwards, **motion down from above** to where the speaker is.
- ṫíoṡ (ṡíoṡ), down, below, **rest below** the place where the speaker is.
- anuaṡ (aḋuṡ),* down, **rest** where the speaker is.

436. The following examples will fully illustrate the use of the words for "up" and "down":—

A.

A says to **B**,	I'll throw it **down**,	Caiṫḟiḋ mé ṡíoṡ é.
	Is it **down** yet?	Ḃḟuil ṡé ṫíoṡ ḟóṡ?
	Throw it **up**,	Caiṫ aníoṡ é.
	It is **up** now,	Tá ṡé aníoṡ anoiṡ.
B says to **A**,	I'll throw it **up**,	Caiṫḟiḋ mé ṡuaṡ é.
	Is it **up** yet?	Ḃḟuil ṡé ṫuaṡ ḟóṡ?
	Throw it **down**,	Caiṫ anuaṡ é.
	It is **down** now.	Tá ṡé anuaṡ anoiṡ.

B.

N.B.—He is **up** (*i.e.*, he is not in bed), Tá ṡé 'na ṡuiḋe.

We are **up**, Táṡinn 'náṡ ṡuiḋe

* See foot-note at end of page 160.

437. Aḃus, on this side, aḃus agus ṫall, here and there, on this side or on that (*when rest is implied*).

anall agus anonn, here and there: hither and thither, to this side and to that (*when motion is implied*).

Over.

438. The following sentences will exemplify the translation of the word "**over**":—

A.——————————B.

A says to **B**, I'll throw it **over** to you,	Caiṫfiḋ mé anonn ċugat é.
„ Is it **over** yet?	Ḃfuil sé ṫall fós?
„ Throw it **over** to me,	Caiṫ anall ċugam é.
„ It is **over** now,	Tá sé aḃus anois.

439. He went **over** the wall.	Ċuaiḋ sé ṫar an mballa.
He went **over** to Scotland.	Ċuaiḋ sé anonn 'go h-Albain.
He came **over** from Scotland.	Táinig sé anall ó Albain.

East and West.

The root oir means front: iar means back.

440. The ancients faced the rising sun in naming the points of the Compass; hence ṫoir, **east;** ṫiar, **west;** ṫuaiḋ, **north;** ṫeaṡ, **south.**

441.
- soir, motion eastward from the place where we are.
- ṫoir (ḟoir), rest in the east, with regard to where we are.
- anoir, motion from the east to the place where we are.

442.
- siar, motion westward from the place where we are.
- ṫiar (ḟiar), rest in the west.
- aniar, motion from the west to the place where we are.
- aḃus, here, rest at the place where we are.

443. The words ṫiar, ṫoir, ṫuaiḋ, ṫeas, have primary reference to position with regard to the person.

444. With reference to a house, siar is *inwards*, soir is *outwards*.

Compound, or **Phrase Adverbs.**

445. The following list are really phrases formed of nouns or adverbs preceded by prepositions.

i ḃfad,*	afar off, in space or time: i ḃfad ar so,* far from here: i ḃfad roiṁe, long before.
i gcéin,	far off.
i gcoṁnuiḋe,	always.
ar ais,	back; as, Come back. Tar ar ais.
ar gcúl,	backwards.
i dtosaċ, ar dtús, ar dtúis,	first, at first, in the beginning.
i gcéadóir,	immediately, instantly.
ann so,	here.
ann sin,	there.
ar ball,	by and by, after awhile (it sometimes means immediately).
ar aon ċor, i n-aon ċor ar aon ċuma ar biṫ, ar ċuma ar biṫ,	at all, at any rate.
ar éigin,	with difficulty, hardly, perforce.
i leiṫ,	apart, aside, separately; gaḃ i leiṫ, come hither.

* a is frequently used instead of i in these phrases.

ar ṁoḋ,	in a manner, so that.
ar uairiḃ,	sometimes, at times.
i n-áirde,	on high; cosa 'n-áirde, at full gallop.
i n-éinḟeaċt,	together.
beagnaċ,	almost.
cá h-as, cad as,	whence, from what.
ca ṁeud, cia ṁeud,	how many, how much.
do ṡíor,	always.
eaḋon,	that is, *id est*, *i.e.*
fá ḋeoiġ, fá ḋeoiḋ,	at last.
fá ḋó,	twice; fá ṫrí, thrice, &c., &c.
fá ṡeaċ,	by turns, respectively.
go bráṫ,	ever (future), to the judgment.
ċoiḋċe,	for ever (future).
riaṁ,	ever (past).
go h-áiriṫe,	especially.
go deiṁin,	indeed.
go h-iomlán,	entirely, altogether.
go léir,	entirely.
go leor,	enough.
mar an gceudna,	likewise, in like manner.
ó ṡoin i leiṫ, ó ṡoin amaċ,	from that time out.
tuille(aḋ) eile, tuille fós,	besides, moreover.
fá ḋeire(aḋ),	at last.

mar sin de,	therefore, thereupon.
maratá, maratáid,	namely, viz., *i.e.*
de ġnáṫ,	usually.
de láṫair,	presently, just now.
dá·ríriḃ,	really, in fact.
láiṫreaċ bonn, lom láiṫreaċ,	just now, exactly now, immediately.
fá ṫuairim,	conjecturally.
go mór-ṁór, go h-urṁór,	especially.
ós ísiol,	secretly, lowly.
ós árd,	aloud, above board, openly
de ló,	by day.
d'oiḋċe, ist'oiḋċe,	by night.
óċéile (ó n-a ċéile),	asunder.
(d)áir ndóiġ,	sure, surely.
ar maidin,	in the morning.
sa tráṫnóna, um ṫráṫnóna,	in the evening.
ar maidin indiu	this morning.
ar maidin i mbáraċ,	on to-morrow morning.
sa tráṫnóna indiu,	this evening.
aṫruġaḋ indé,	on the day before yesterday.
aṫruġaḋ i mbáraċ, anoirṫear, umánoirṫear,	on the day after to-morrow.
lá ar n-a ḃáraċ,	on the following day.
i mbliaḋna,	(during) this year.
anuraiḋ,	(during) last year.
aṫruġaḋ anuraiḋ,	(during) the year before last.

446. The phrases which have just been given about morning, evening, &c., are strictly adverbial, and cannot be used as nouns.

447.

Adverbs.		Nouns.	
dia Domhnaigh,	on Sunday	Domhnach, m.,	Sunday
dia Luain,	on Monday	Luan, m.,	Monday
dia Máirt,	on Tuesday	Máirt, f.,	Tuesday
dia Ceudaoin',	on Wednesday	Ceudaoin, f.,	Wednesday
dia Ḋardaoin',	on Thursday	Dardaoin, f.,	Thursday
dia h-Aoine,	on Friday	Aoine, f.,	Friday
dia Sathairn,	on Saturday	Satharn, m.,	Saturday

448. Dia takes the name of the day in the genitive case; it is used only when "on" is, or may be, used in English—*i.e.*, when the word is adverbial.

Dia is really an old word for day. It occurs in the two expressions i n-diu, to-day; i n-dé, yesterday. It is now never used except before the names of the days of the week, and in the two expressions just mentioned.

449. "Head-foremost."

He fell head-foremost,	Do thuit sé i ndiaidh* a chinn.
I fell head-foremost,	Do thuiteas i ndiaidh mo chinn.
She fell head-foremost,	Do thuit sí i ndiaidh a cinn.
They fell head-foremost,	Do thuiteadar i ndiaidh a gcinn.

* indiaidh is a phrase meaning "after," and is followed by a genitive case.

CHAPTER VII.

Prepositions.

450. The following list contains the simple prepositions in use in Modern Irish:—

i, a, in, (ann), in	go, to (motion)
ag, (aig), at	roiṁ, before
ar, (air), on	idir, between
as, out of	le, with
dar, by (in swearing)	ó, from
de, off, from	ṫar, } over, across
do, to	tar, } over, across
fá, faoi,* under	tré, trid, through
gan, without	um, im, concerning, about.

451. The prepositions i, in (or ann), go, le, and tré take s when they come before the article, as—

leis an mnaoi, with the woman.

ins an leaḃar, in the book.

ins na páirceannaiḃ, in the fields.

*fé is used in Munster.

CHAPTER VIII.

Conjunctions.

452. The following is a list of the conjunctions in use at present:—

aċt,	but, except.
agus (a's, is, 's),	and, as.
an,	whether (interrogative).
ciḋ, giḋ, cé,	although
giḋeaḋ,	however (=giḋ eaḋ, though it is so).
dá,	if.
de ḃríġ go,	because.
fós,	yet, still.
go,	that.
naċ,	that...not
'ná (ioná),	than.
ionnus go,	so that, in order that.
ionnus naċ,*	so that...not.
má,	if.
mar,	as.
muna,	unless, if...not.
go, nó go, aċt go,	until (before a verb).

* go and naċ are very frequently separated from ionnus by a subordinate or relative clause: *e.g.*, "ionnus, an tí ar a mbiaḋ an siġin sin, go mbiaḋ tearmann aige ó'n oirleaċ;" *so that the person who would be marked with that sign would have protection from the slaughter.*

maiseaḋ,	well, if so
nó,	or.
ná,	nor.
ó,	since, because.
ó naċ	since...not.
ó ṫárla go,	whereas.
óir,	for, because.
sul, sul má,	before (followed by a verb).
uime sin,	therefore, wherefore (these have also an adverbial force).
tar ċeann,	moreover, besides, furthermore.
ar an áḋḃar sin	wherefore, therefore.
mar sin féin,	nevertheless, notwithstanding, even so.
bíoḋ go,	although, whether...or. Bíoḋ sé óg nó aosta, bíoḋ sé saiḋḃir nó boċt. Whether he be young or old, whether he be rich or poor. Bíoḋ is really the imperative 3rd sing. of táim, meaning "*let (him) be.*"

453. The use of MAR before a clause is noteworthy.

fá mar aduḃairt sé, (according) as he said.

ṫar mar ḃí sé deiċ mbliaḋna fiċead ó ṡoin. Beyond (or compared with) how it was 30 years ago.

i dtaoḃ mar deir tú, regarding what you say.

Ṫáinig sé mar a raiḃ Fionn. He came to where Finn was.

mar atá or mar atáid, that is, viz., *i.e.*

mar go mbaḋ iad féin do ḋeunaṁ an ġníoṁa, as if it were they who performed the act.

mar an gceudna, likewise.

mar ġeall ar, on account of.

CHAPTER IX.

454. Interjections and Interjectional Phrases.

A,	O (the sign of the Vocative case).
Eirt,	hush! list!
Fóiríor! Fairíor! Mo ḃrón! Mo ċreaċ! Mo léan! Mo léan géar!	Alas!
Feuċ!	Behold! lo!
Ó bú bú! oċ! uċ! uċón!	Alas!
Mo náire ṫú!	Shame on you!
. . . a bú!	Hurrah for . . . !
Fáilte rómat!	Welcome!

Dia do ḃeaṫa! 'Sé do ḃeaṫa!	Hail!
Slán leat (liḃ)! Slán beo agat (agaiḃ)! Ḃeannaċt leat (liḃ)!	Good-bye!
Dia linn!	God be with us!
Maiseaḋ!	Well! Musha!
Foiġid (foiġne)!	Patience!
Faire!	Take care! Fie!
Go dtéiḋ tú slán!	Safe home!
Go soirḃiġiḋ Dia ḋuit!	God prosper you!
Bí 'do ṫost! Eist do ḃeul!	Silence!
Mo ġoirm tú!	Bravo!
Súd ort! Sláinte!	Good health!
Maiṫ an fear!	Good man!
Maiṫ an buaċaill!	Good fellow!
Buiḋeaċas leat! Go raiḃ maiṫ agat!	Thanks! thank you!
Go n-éiriġiḋ áḋ leat!	Good luck to you!
Nár léiġiḋ Dia sin!	God forbid!
Go mbeannuiġiḋ Dia ḋuit!	God save you! Good morning! &c.
Go mairir, Go mairiḋ tú!	Long life to you!
Go bfóiriḋ Dia orainn!	God help us!
Oiḋċe ṁaiṫ ḋuit!	May you have a good night!
Go dtugaiḋ Dia oiḋċe ṁaiṫ ḋuit!	May God give you a good night!

Go mbuaḋaiḋ Dia leat!	God grant you success!
Slán codalta na h-oiḋċe agat!	Sound night's sleep to you!
Go gcodlair go sáṁ!	May you sleep peacefully
Bail ó Ḋia ort!	God bless you!
Cuideaċan Dé leat!	May God accompany you!
Fad saoġail agat!	Long life to you!
Buaiḋ leat! / Raṫ go raiḃ ort!	Success to you!

CHAPTER X.

WORD-BUILDING.

Prefixes.

455. The following is a list of the principal prefixes used in Irish. Some of them have double forms owing to the rule caol le caol.

ais or éis, back, again; like the English *re-*;
íoc, payment; aisíoc, repayment, restitution.

aṁ or aiṁ,	Negative particles	réiḋ, even; aiṁréiḋ, uneven.
an „ ain,		tráṫ, time; i n-antráṫ, untimely.
dí „ dío,*		ceann, a head; díċeannaḋ, to behead.
mí „ mío,		coṁairle, an advice; mío-ċoṁairle, an evil advice.
neaṁ „ neiṁ,		niḋ, a thing; neiṁniḋ, nothing, non-entity.
eas,		cáirdeas, friendship; eas-ċáirdeas, enmity.

é or éa, a negative particle. It eclipses c and t and becomes éag before s. Cóir, just; éagcóir, unjust; trom, heavy; éadtrom, light; cosṁail, like; eugsaṁail, different.

droċ, bad, evil; meas, esteem; droċ-ṁeas, reproach, disesteem.

coṁ, equal; aimsir, time; coṁ-aimsearaċ, contemporary.

---

* dí, dío eclipse words beginning with b or f, díombuiḋeaċas, ingratitude.

an,	Intensifying particles	mór, big; an-ṁór, very big.
il, iol,		daṫ, a colour; ioldaṫaċ, many-coloured.
ró,		mór, big; ró-ṁór, too big.
sár,		te, warm; sár-ṫe, excessively warm
lán,		aiḋḃéil. vast; lán-aiḋḃéil, awfully vast.
úr,		gránda, ugly; úr-ġránda, very ugly.

leaṫ, a half; leaṫ-uair, half an hour; sgeul, a story; leiṫ-sgeul, an excuse.

in, ion, fit, suitable; deunta, done; in-deunta, fit to be done; ráiḋte, said; ion-ráiḋte, fit to be said; ion-ṁolta, praiseworthy; ion-ólta, drinkable; in-iṫte, eatable, edible. (See pars. 286, 288.)

reuṁ, before; ráiḋte, said; reuṁ-ráiḋte, aforesaid.

friṫ, back; friṫ-ṫeaċt, coming and going; friṫ-ḃualaḋ, palpitation, or a return stroke.

ban, a feminine prefix; flaiṫ, a prince; ban-ḟlaiṫ, a princess; bain-tiġearna, a lady.

aṫ, a reiterative particle: ráḋ, a saying; aṫ-ráḋ, a repetition; aṫuair, another time; an aṫḃliaḋain, next year; an aṫseaċtṁain, next week. Aṫ has sometimes the force of "dis" in dismantle, as cumaḋ, to form;

atċumaḋ, to deform, destroy; ríoġaḋ, to crown, to elect a king; atríoġaḋ, to dethrone.

biṫ, bioṫ, lasting, constant; buan, lasting; bioṫ-ḃuan, everlasting; biṫ-ḟíreun, ever-faithful.

do and so, two particles which have directly opposite meanings, as have often the letters d and s. Do denotes *difficulty, ill*, or the *absence of some good quality*; so denotes the opposite.

do-ḋeunta, hard to be done	so-ḋeunta, easy to be done
dólás, sorrow	sólás, comfort, joy
donas, bad-luck	sonas, good-luck
duḃaċ, sad	suḃaċ, merry
daiḋḃir, poor	saiḋḃir, rich
daoi, a fool	saoi, a wise man
diṫ, want, misery	siṫ, peace, plenty
duḃailce, vice	suḃailce, virtue
daor, condemned, dear	saor, free, cheap
doċar, harm	soċar, profit
dona, unlucky, unhappy	sona, lucky, happy
doineann, bad weather	soineann, fine weather
docaṁail, inconvenient	socaṁail, convenient

456. Affixes or Terminations.

aċ, when it is the termination of an adjective, means full of, abounding in: briaṫar, a word; briaṫraċ, wordy, talkative; feurаċ, grassy.

ać, when it is the termination of a noun, denotes a person or personal agent: as Éireannać, an Irishman; Albanać, a Scotchman.

aćt is an abstract termination, like the English *-ness*: milis, sweet; milseaćt, sweetness.

N.B.—The termination -aćt is usually added to adjectives.

aiḋe, uiḋe, iḋe, are personal terminations denoting an agent: sgeul, a story; sgeuluiḋe, a story-teller; cos, a foot; coisiḋe, a pedestrian.

aire, ire, are also personal terminations denoting an agent: cealg, deceit; cealgaire, a deceiver.

aṁail, a termination having the very same force as the English *like* or *ly*: fearaṁail, manly; flaiṫeaṁail, princely, generous.

as, eas, or sometimes s alone, an abstract termination like aćt: maiṫ, good: maiṫeas, goodness; ceann, a head; ceannas, headship, authority.

ḃar and ḃre have a collective force: as, duille, a leaf (of a tree); duilleaḃar, foliage.

ḋa, da, or ta, is an adjectival termination which has usually the force of the English *-like*: mórḋa, majestic; órḋa, golden; gallda, exotic, foreign (from gall, a stranger, a foreigner).

e is an abstract termination like aċt or as: whenever it is added to an adjective the resulting abstract noun, owing to the rule "caol le caol," has the very same form as the *genitive singular feminine of the adjective*: as, fial, generous; féile, generosity; árd, high; áirde, height; geal, bright; gile, brightness; áilne, beauty.

laċ, naċ, raċ, taċ, traċ, have all the same meaning as aċ, viz., full of, abounding in: muc, a pig; muclaċ, a piggery; coill, a wood; coillteaċ, a place full of woods; fuilteaċ, bloody; toilteaċ (toilteannaċ), willing.

ṁar means *full of, abounding in*: ceol, music; ceolṁar, musical; greann, fun; greannṁar, full of fun, amusing; ciallṁar, sensible, intelligent.

óir, dóir, or tóir, denotes a *personal agent*: speal, a scythe; spealadóir, a mower, reaper; doirseóir, a door-keeper.

Diminutives.

457. In Irish there are three diminutive terminations, viz., ín, án, and óg. However, ín is practically the only diminutive termination in Modern Irish as án and óg have almost lost their diminutive force. A double diminutive is sometimes met with, as árdáinín, *a very little height*.

ín.

458. The termination ín, meaning "small" or "little," may be added to almost every Irish noun. Whenever the final consonant is broad it must be made slender (as the ín always remains unaltered), **the vowels undergoing the same changes as in the formation of the genitive singular, but Ċ is not changed into Ġ** (see pars. 60 and 78).

asal, an ass	asailín, a little ass
fear, a man	firín, a ,, man
gort, a field	guirtín, a ,, field
cailleaċ, an old woman	cailliċín, a ,, old woman
sráid, a street	sráidín, a ,, street, a lane

If the noun ends in e, drop the e and add ín; but if the noun ends in a, drop the a and attenuate the preceding consonant; then add ín.

páisde páisdín Nóra Nóirín mála máilín

459. án.

sruṫán, a brook,	from sruṫ, a stream.
árdán, a hillock,	,, árd, high.
dealgán, a knitting-needle,	,, dealg, a thorn.
biorán, a pin,	,, bior, a spit.
leaḃrán, a booklet,	,, leaḃar, a book.
geugán, a twig,	,, geug, a branch.
loċán, a little lake,	,, loċ, a lake.
sgiaṫán, a wing,	,, sgiaṫ, a shield.

The above are examples of real diminutives, but such examples are not very numerous.

460. óᵹ.

piaſtóᵹ (péiſteoᵹ),	a worm,	from piaſt, a reptile.
laſóᵹ,	a match,	„ laſ, a light.
ᵹaḃlóᵹ,	a little fork,	„ ᵹaḃal, a fork.

These are examples of real diminutives in óᵹ, but such real diminutives are not numerous, as most nouns in óᵹ have practically the same meaning as the nouns from which they were derived (the latter being now generally obsolete): cuileóᵹ, a fly, from cuil, a fly; dṙiſeóᵹ, a briar, from dṙiſ, a briar; fuinnſeóᵹ, an ash, from fuinnſe, an ash.

In Craig's Grammar we find luċóᵹ, a rat (luċ, a mouse). This example is a striking instance of the fact that the termination óᵹ is losing (if it has not already lost) its diminutive force.

All derived nouns in óᵹ are feminine.

Derived Nouns.

461. Words are of three classes—Simple, Derivative, and Compound. All simple words are, as a general rule, monosyllables; they are the roots from which derivative and compound words spring. Derivative words are made up of two or more parts. These parts undergo slight changes when they are united to form words, and thus the component parts are somewhat disguised. The difficulty which presents itself to a student in the spelling of Irish is more apparent than real. The principle of vowel-assimilation is the key to

Irish spelling. Let a student once thoroughly grasp the rules for "caol le caol, &c," "aspiration," "eclipsis," "attenuation," and "syncope," and immediately all difficulty vanishes.

Derivatives are formed of simple words and particles. The most important of the latter have been already given under the headings "Prefixes" and "Affixes." We will here give some examples of derivative nouns, a careful study of which will enable the student to split up the longest words into their component parts, and thus arrive at their meanings.

462. trom means heavy; tromas, *i.e.*, trom+as (the abstract termination) means heaviness or weight; éadtrom, light, from trom, and the negative particle éa, which eclipses c and t, hence the d; éadtromas, lightness, from éa, not; trom, heavy; as, ness; coimṫrom, impartial, fair, or just; from coiṁ, equal, and trom, heavy; coiṁṫromas, impartiality, fairness, &c.; éagcoiṁṫrom, partial, unjust; from éa+ coiṁ+trom; éagcoiṁṫromas, partiality, injustice; from éa+coiṁ+trom+as. Spealadóir, a reaper; from speal, a scythe, and dóir, an affix denoting an agent; the a is put in between the l and d to assist pronunciation: cáirde, friends; cáirdeas, friendliness, friendship; eugcáirdeas, unfriendliness, hostility: fearaṁlaċt, manliness; from fear + aṁail + aċt: neiṁ-ġeanaṁlaċt, unamiability; from neiṁ, not + gean, affection + aṁail + aċt: ríoġaċt, a

kingdom, from ríoġ + aċt: comórtas, comparison, emulation, competition; from co (coṁ), equal, and mórtas, greatness, *i.e.*, comparing the greatness of one thing with that of another.

463. Compound nouns are formed by the union of two or more simple nouns, or of a noun and an adjective.

(A.) **A compound noun formed of two or more nouns, each in the nominative case, has its declension determined by the last noun. Its gender also is that of the last noun,** unless the first noun-part be such as requires a different gender. The first word qualifies the second, and the initial consonant of the second is *usually* aspirated.

(B.) **If the compound is formed of a noun in the nominative form followed by a genitive noun, the first is the principal noun, and determines the declension and gender;** the second qualifies the first, and generally remains unaltered, and the aspiration of the initial consonant in this case depends on the gender of the first noun. See par. 21(f).

We will give here a few examples of the two chief kinds of compound nouns. It is usual to employ a hyphen between the nouns in Class A, but not in Class B.

464. **Class A.**

breuġ-rí, a pseudo king	breuġ, a lie, and rí, a king
bun-sruṫ, a fountain	bun, a source, origin, and sruṫ, a stream
caṫ-ḃarr, a helmet	caṫ, a battle, and bárr, top, head
clap-ṡolas, twilight	
cloig-ṫeaċ, a belfry	clog, a clock, bell, and teaċ, a house
craoḃ-ḟleasg, a garland	craoḃ, a branch, and fleasg, a wreath
cúl-ċaint, back-biting	cúl, the back of the head, and caint, talk
caoir-ḟeoil, mutton laoiġ-ḟeoil, veal muic-ḟeoil, pork, bacon mairt-ḟeoil, beef	feoil, flesh; caora, a sheep laoġ, a calf; muc, a pig mart, a beef
láṁ-ḋia, a household god láṁ-eudaċ, a handkerchief, a napkin láṁ-ord, a hand-sledge	láṁ, a hand; Dia, God; eudaċ, a cloth; ord, a sledge
leiṫ-sgeul,* an excuse	leaṫ, a half, and sgeul, a story

ór-ḟlat, a sceptre; ór, gold; and slat, a rod

tír-ġráḋ, patriotism; tír, country; and gráḋ, love

*Gaḃ mo leiṫ-sgeul I beg your pardon. (Lit. Accept my excuse).

465. **Class B.**

brat taise, a winding-sheet (a garment of death).

fear ceoil, a musician (a man of music).

fear feasa, a seer (a man of knowledge; fios, gen. feasa).

fear tiġe, a householder (a man of a house).

mac tíre, a wolf (son of (the) country).

cú ṁara, an otter (a hound of the sea; muir, gen. mara).

laoġ mara, a seal (a calf of the sea).

fear ionaid, a lieutenant, vicegerent (a man of place).

teaċ ósta, an inn, hotel (a house of entertainment).

maiġistir scoile, a schoolmaster (a master of a school).

uḃ ċirce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen.)

bean síḋe or bean t-síḋe, a witch (a woman of the síoḋ, a fairy hill).

466. **A Noun and an Adjective.**

árd-rí, a high king.

árd-tiġearna, a sovereign lord.

árd-réim, supreme power, chief power.

claon-ḃreiṫ, partiality; claon, inclined: and breiṫ, a judgment.

crom-leac, a druidical altar; crom, bent; and leac, a stone, flag.

daor-ḃreiṫ, condemnation; daor, condemned.

daor-óglaċ, a bond-slave; óglaċ, a servant.

dearḃráṫair (dearḃ-ḃráṫair), a brother by blood
deirḃṡiúr, a sister by blood.
dearḃ, real or true. bráṫair and siúr, brother and sister (in religion).

fíor-uisge, spring water: fíor, true, pure; uisge, water.

gairḃ-ṡíon, a tempest: garḃ, rough; and síon, weather.

girr-ḟiaḋ, a hare: gearr, short; and fiaḋ, a deer.

nuaḋ-ḋuine, an upstart: nuaḋ, new, fresh; and duine, a person.

sean-aṫair, a grandfather,
sean-sean-aṫair (sé-sean-aṫair), a great grandfather.
sean-ṁáṫair, a grandmother.
sean-aois, old age.
sean-reaċt, the old law.
sean, old; aṫair, a father.
máṫair, a mother;
aois, age.
reaċt, law; dliġe is a more common word for law.

treun-ḟear, a brave man.

treun-laoċ, a hero.

saor-ṡealḃ, a freehold: sealḃ, possession.

trom-luiġe, a nightmare.

uasal-aṫair, a patriarch.

saoiḃ-ċiall, folly, silliness: saoḃ, silly; and ciall, sen se

fóir-ḃriaṫar, an adverb: fóir, before; and briaṫar, a word.

fóir-imeall, a frontier, extremity; imeall, a border, a hem.

fóir-ḃreiṫ, a prejudice (a fore-judgment).

fóir-neart, violence.

fóir-éigean, oppression, compulsion.

Formation of Adjectives.

467. (*a*) **Adjectives may be formed from many nouns by the addition of aċ or eaċ,** which signifies *full of, abounding in.* All these adjectives belong to the first declension, and are declined like díreaċ.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
fearg, anger	feargaċ, angry
fuil, blood	fuilteaċ, bloody
feur, grass	feuraċ, grassy
buaiḋ, victory	buaḋaċ, victorious
breug, a lie	breugaċ, false, lying
díċeall, one's best endeavour	díċeallaċ, energetic
seasaṁ, standing	seasṁaċ, steadfast
gnó, work	gnóṫaċ, busy
clú, fame	clúiteaċ, famous
saoṫar, toil	saoṫraċ, industrious
lúb, a loop	lúbaċ, deceitful
saoġal, life	saoġlaċ, long-lived
sáiṫ, sufficiency	sáṫaċ, satiated
Alba, Scotland	Albanaċ, Scotch
Sacsain, England	Sacsanaċ, English
craoḃ, branch	craoḃaċ, branchy
carraig. a rock	cairgeaċ, rocky
brón, sorrow	brónaċ, sorrowful
sal, dirt	salaċ, dirty
fios, knowledge	fiosaċ, intelligent
áṫas, joy	áṫasaċ, joyous
doilġios, sorrow	doilġiosaċ, sorrowful

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
cleas, a trick	cleasaċ, tricky
tuirse, weariness	tuirseaċ, weary
uisge, water	uisgeaċ, watery
neul, a cloud	neulaċ, cloudy
leanḃ, a child	leanḃaċ, childish
gaoṫ, wind	gaoṫaċ, windy
imniḋe, anxiety	imniḋeaċ, anxious
cúṁaċt, power	cúṁaċtaċ, powerful
reul, a star	reultaċ, starry
aire, care	aireaċ, attentive
foiġid, patience	foiġideaċ, patient
eagla, fear	eaglaċ, timid
toil, a will	toilteaċ, willing
cúram, heed	cúramaċ, careful
iomarca, too much	iomarcaċ, excessive, copious

(*b*). **Many adjectives are formed by adding ṁar to nouns.**

All these adjectives belong to the first declension and are declined like mór.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
áḋ, luck	áḋṁar, lucky.
ceol, music	ceolṁar, musical
ciall, sense	ciallṁar, sensible
feur, grass	feurṁar, grassy
feoil, flesh	feolṁar, fleshy
fonn, fancy	fonnṁar, desirous

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
glóir, glory	glórṁar, glorious
greann, fun	greannṁar, funny
luaċ, price, value	luaċṁar, valuable
líon, number	líonṁar, numerous
neart, strength	neartṁar, powerful
sgáṫ, a shadow	sgáṫṁar, shy, startled
lúṫ, activity	lúṫṁar, active, nimble

(*c*). **Very many adjectives are formed from nouns by the addition of aṁail or eaṁail** (both pronounced oo-il or u-wil). All these adjectives belong to the third declension.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
fear, a man	fearaṁail, manly
bean, a woman	beanaṁail, womanly
flaiṫ, a prince	flaiṫeaṁail, generous
ainm, a name	ainmeaṁail, renowned
meas, esteem	measaṁail, estimable
lá (pl. laeṫe), a day	laeṫeaṁail, daily
gráin, hatred	gráineaṁail, hateful
cara (pl. cáirde), a friend	cáirdeaṁail, friendly
naṁa (pl. náiṁde), an enemy	náiṁdeaṁail, hostile
croiḋe, a heart	croiḋeaṁail, hearty, gay
rí (gen. ríoġ), a king	ríoġaṁail, kingly, royal
caoi (pl. caoiṫe), a way	caoiṫeaṁail, opportune
riar, order	riaraṁail, subject, docile obedient
gean, affection	geanaṁail, affectionate
moḋ, manner	moḋaṁail, mannerly

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
tír (pl. tíorṫa), country	tíorṫaṁail, country-like, homely, social
meisneaċ, misneaċ, } courage	misneaṁail, courageous
teine (pl. teinte), fire	teinteaṁail, fiery, ignecus
sliaḃ, (pl. sléiḃte), a mountain	sléiḃteaṁail, mountainous
greann, fun	greannaṁail, funny, gay
eun, a bird	eunaṁail, bird-like, airy
comursa, a neighbour	comursaṁail, neighbourly
barántas, authority	barántaṁail, authentic

(*d*). **There is a fourth class of adjectives formed by the termination da (ḋa)**; but it is not as large as the three preceding classes. The following are some of the principal ones :—

diaḋa, godly, divine	daona (daonda) human
fearḋa, masculine	gránda, ugly
beanda, feminine	cróḋa, brave
órḋa, golden, gilt.	beoḋa, lively
laoċḋa, heroic	gallda, exotic or foreign
seanda, ancient	naoṁṫa (naoṁḋa), holy, saintly

Compound adjectives are extremely common in Irish, being usually formed by the union of two or more simple adjectives (sometimes of a noun and an

adjective); but these compound adjectives present no difficulty once the simple adjectives have been mastered.

FORMATION OF VERBS.

468. Verbs can be readily formed from nouns and adjectives by the addition of iġ or uiġ. The addition of this termination is sometimes accompanied by syncope, which often necessitates slight vowel changes in accordance with the rule "caol le caol."

469. (*a*). Verbs derived from Nouns.

NOUN.	VERB (Stem).
ainm, a name	ainmniġ, name
beaṫa, life	beaṫuiġ, nourish
cuiṁne, memory	cuiṁniġ, remember
cuid, a part	cuidiġ le, assist (take part with)
cúl, the back of the head	cúluiġ, retire
saoṫar, exertion	saoṫruiġ, exert
cuairt, a visit	cuartuiġ, visit, search
leas, improvement	leasuiġ, improve
neart, strength	neartuiġ, strengthen
aċt, a decree	aċtuiġ, decree, enact
bás, death	básuiġ, put to death
caṫ, a battle	caṫuiġ, contend, fight
céim, a step	céimniġ, step, advance
críoċ, an end	críoċnuiġ, finish
criṫ, a trembling	criṫniġ, tremble

NOUN.	VERB (Stem).
gorta, hunger, injury	gortuiġ, injure
iomad, multitude	iomaduiġ, multiply
órd, an order	órduiġ, order, command
solus, a light	soillsiġ, enlighten
tus (tos), a beginning	tosuiġ, begin
treoir, a guide	treoruiġ, guide, lead
pian, pain	pianuiġ, cause pain
obair, work	oibriġ, work

(*b*). **Verbs derived from Adjectives.**

ADJECTIVE.	VERB (Stem).
árd, high	árduiġ, raise
bán, white	bánuiġ, whiten
duḃ, black	duḃuiġ, blacken
boḋar, deaf	boḋruiġ, deafen, bother
buan, lasting	buanuiġ preserve
follus, apparent	foillsiġ, reveal, show
fuar, cold	fuaruiġ, cool, chill
lag, weak	laguiġ, weaken
slán, well	slánuiġ, make well, cure
tirim, dry	tiormuiġ, or triomuiġ, dry
boċt, poor	boċtuiġ, impoverish
ceart, right	ceartuiġ, correct
mín, fine	míniġ, make fine, *explain*
ísiol, low	ísliġ, lower
uṁal, humble	uṁluiġ, humble
saiḋḃir, rich	saiḋḃriġ, enrich

The compound verbs are very few, and are therefore of little consequence to the beginner.

PART III.—SYNTAX.

CHAPTER I.

The Article.

470. In Irish the article always precedes its noun, and agrees with it in gender, number aud case: as, an ꝼeaꞃ, the man; na ꝼiꞃ, the men; an ḟiꞃ, of the man; na mná, of the woman.

The initial changes produced by the article have been fully given in par. 40.

471. When one noun governs another in the genitive case the article cannot be used with the first noun: as, mac an ḟiꞃ, *the* son of the man; ꝼeaꞃ an ꞇiġe, *the* man of tho house, &c.

Exceptions. (1) When a demonstrative adjective is used with the first noun (the governing one), the article must also be used; as, ꞇá an ꞇeaċ ꞅin mo ċaꞃaꝺ le ꝺíol, that house of my friend's is for sale.

(2) If the two nouns form a compound word, the article is used before the first, if used in English: a newspaper, páipeuꞃ nuaiḋeaċꞇa; but, the newspaper, an páipeuꞃ nuaiḋeaċꞇa.

(3) When the noun in the genitive case is an indefinite* one, *which denotes a part of something, the material of which a thing is made*, or *the contents of the first noun*, the article is used with the first noun when it is used in English :—

an ʒreim arán, the piece of bread.
an mála mine, the bag of meal.
an crúirʒín uirʒe, the little jug of water.

We say blar arán, for, the taste of bread ; bolaṫ éirʒ, the smell of fish ; mac ríoʒ, the son of a king ; because if the noun in the genitive expresses quality, connection, or origin, the governing noun does not take the article.

472. If a nominative be followed by several genitives the article can be used only with the last (if "the" be used in English), as, truime ċinn an ċapaill, the weight of the horse's head.

The article is often omitted before a noun which is antecedent to a relative clause ; as, ir é duine do ḃí ann. He is the person who was there.

473. In the following cases the definite article is frequently used in Irish though not used in English.

(1) **Before surnames,** when not preceded by a Christian name, as, Raiḃ an Ḃreaṫnaċ annrin ? Was Walsh there ?

* See par. 585.

(2) **Before the names of some countries,** as, an Spáinn, Spain; an Ḟrainc, France; rí na h-Éireann, the king of Ireland: also before Rome, 'san Róiṁ, in Rome; ó'n Róiṁ, from Rome. **The article is not used before the names of Ireland, England or Scotland in the nominative and dative cases.**

(3) **Before abstract nouns:** an t-ocras, hunger.

Is maiṫ an t-annlann an t-ocras. Hunger is a good sauce.

We frequently use an báṡ for "death."

The article is not used in such sentences, as:—

Tá ocras orm. I am hungry.

(4) **Before nouns qualified by the demonstrative adjectives:** an fear sin, that man; an ḃean so, this woman.

(5) **Before adjectives used as nouns:**

an ṁaiṫ agus an t-olc, goodness and badness.

Is fearr liom an glas ná an dearg. I prefer green to red.

(6) After "cia," meaning "which" or "what."

Cia an fear? Which man?

Cia an leaḃar? What book?

(7) To translate "**apiece,**" "**per**" or "**a**" before words expressing weight and measure.

Reul an ceann. Sixpence apiece.

Pinginn an púnt. A penny a pound.

Sgilling an dusaon (duisín). A shilling a dozen.

(8). **Before titles:**

An t-aṫair Eoġan Ua Gramna. Father Eugene O'Growney.

An t-aṫair Peadar Ua Laoġaire. Father Peter O'Leary.

An doċtúir Dubglas De h-Íde. Dr. Douglas Hyde.

(9) **To express any attribute:**

A ḃean na dtrí mbó. O woman of three cows.

(10) The article is used before the word denoting the use to which a thing is put, or the place where a thing is found or produced.

Mála na mine. The meal bag, *i.e.*, the bag for holding meal.

Crúisgín an uisge. The water-jug.

Compare these with the following:—

An mála mine. The bag of meal.

An crúisgín uisge. The jug of water.

(11) Before the word "uile" meaning "every."

An uile ḟear. Every man.

An uile ṫír. Every country.

(12) Whenever an indefinite noun, accompanied by an adjective is predicated of a pronoun by means of the verb is, the definite article must be used with the noun whenever the adjective is placed immediately after the verb.

Is breáġ an lá é. It is a fine day.

Is maiṫ an fear tú. You are a good man.

(13) **Before the names of seasons, months, days of the week** (when not preceded by the word dia), and in Ulster and Munster before numerals when they are not followed by nouns.

Tá sé an dó. It is two.

An é an Saṫarn atá againn? Is to-day Saturday?

An indiu an Luan?
An é so an Luan? } Is this Monday?

Indiu an Aoine. To-day is Friday.

CHAPTER II.

The Noun.

474. In Irish one noun governs another in the genitive case, and the governed noun comes after the governing one.

Ceann an ċapaill. The horse's head.

The noun, capaill, in the genitive case is aspirated by the article because it is masculine gender. It would not be aspirated if it were feminine. (See par. 40.)

475. When the governed noun in the genitive is a proper name it is generally aspirated, whether it be masculine or feminine, although the article is not used.

Peann Ṁáire. Mary's pen.

Leaḃar Ṡeaġáin. John's book.

The last rule is by no means generally true of *place names.*

476. When the nóun in genitive case has the force of an adjective, it is not preceded by the article, but its initial consonant is subject to precisely the same rules, with regard to aspiration and eclipsis, as if it were a simple adjective, *i.e.*, it is aspirated if the governing noun be nominative or accusative singular feminine, or genitive singular masculine. It is eclipsed if the governing noun be in the genitive plural.

ubh chirce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen).
uibhe circe, of a hen-egg.
fear ceoil, a musician.
fir cheoil, of a musician.
na bhfear gceoil, of the musicians.

477. Apposition has almost entirely disappeared in modern Irish, **the second noun being now usually in the nominative case,** no matter what the case of the first may be.

478. A noun used adjectively in English is translated into Irish by the genitive case.

A gold ring, fáinne óir (lit. a ring of gold).
A hen-egg, ubh chirce.
Oatmeal, min choirce.

479. Collective nouns (except in their own plurals) always take the article and qualifying adjectives in the singular; they *sometimes* take a plural pronoun, and may take a plural verb.

Tángadar an buidean curad sin do láthair Finn agus do beannuig siad dó. That company of warriors came into the presence of Finn, and saluted him (lit. to him).

480. Nouns denoting fulness or a part of anything are usually followed by the preposition de and the dative case, but the genitive is also used.

ceann (or gadar) d'ár ngadraib, one of our hounds.
bárr mo bróige, the top of my shoe.
lán mo duirn, the full of my fist.

In phrases such as "some of us," "one of them," &c., "of us," "of them," &c., are usually translated by againn, aca, &c.; but dinn, díob, &c., may also be used.

481. The personal numerals from dias to dáreug inclusive (see par. 177) **generally take their nouns in the genitive plural:** beirt mac, two sons; naonbar fear, nine men (lit. two of sons, nine of men).

A triúr mac agus a dtriúr ban.
His three sons and their three wives.

482. When used partitively they take de **with the dative.**

Báid sé naonbar díob fá 'n loch.
He drowned nine of them under the lake.
Naoi naonbar de mhaoraib na h-Éireann.
Nine times nine of the stewards of Erin.

Personal Nouns.

483. An Irish name consists of two parts, the ainm-baiṙdiḋ (or simply ainm), which corresponds to the English Christian name, and the sloinneaḋ, the surname or family name.

Surnames were first used in Ireland about the eleventh century: until that time every Irish personal name was significant, and sometimes rendered more so by the application of some epithet. "In the early ages individuals received their names from epithets implying some personal peculiarity, such as colour of hair, complexion, size, figure, certain accidents of deformity, mental qualities, such as bravery, fierceness, &c." Joyce's "Irish Names of Places."

484. When the Christian name is used in addressing a person, it is always in the vocative case, and preceded by the particle a, which causes aspiration, *e.g.*:

Fan liom, a Ṡeaġáin.	Wait for me, John.
Dia ḋuit, a Ṡeumaiṙ.	Good morning, James.

485. When the Christian name is in the genitive case, it is aspirated, *e.g.*:

Leabar Ṁáire.	Mary's book.
Sgian Ṡeoirse.	George's knife.

486. Surnames when not preceded by a Christian name usually take the termination aċ, which has the force of a patronymic (or father-name), and are declined like marcaċ (par. 57). **They are usually preceded by the article except in the vocative case:** an Paoraċ, Power; an Brianaċ, O'Brien; capall an

Ṗaoraiġ. Power's horse. Ṫugas an t-airgead do'n Ḃrianaċ. I gave the money to O'Brien. Gaḃ i leiṫ, a Ḃrianaiġ. Come here, O'Brien.

487. Surnames occurring in Ireland to-day are of three classes: (1) Surnames of Gaelic origin. **These in almost every instance have the prefix Ó (Ua) or Mac for a male, and Ní or Nic for a female.** (2) Surnames of old foreign origin. The majority of these have no prefix. (3) Surnames of late foreign origin. Only a few of these have acquired a distinct form, pronounced in an Irish way.

488. When the surname is preceded by any of the words Ó (Ua), Mac, Ní, Nic, the surname is in the genitive case, and is aspirated after Ní or Nic, but not after Ó or Mac: *e.g.*, Seaġán Mac Doṁnaill, John McDonnell; Máire Ní Ċonaill, Mary O'Connell; Diarmuid Ó Conaill, Dermot O'Connell; Nóra Nic Doṁnaill, Nora McDonnell.

489. When the whole name is in the genitive case, the words after Uí (gen. of Ó or Ua) and Ṁic (gen. of Mac) are aspirated; Ní and Nic do not change in genitive. Leaḃar Ṡeumais Uí Ḃriain, James O'Brien's book; bó Ḃriain Ṁic Doṁnaill, Brian McDonnell's cow.

490. Mac and Ó aspirate when they really **mean** "son" and "grandson" respectively.

Mac Domhnaill, Donal's son.
Mac Domhnaill, McDonnell.
Ó Briain, Brian's grandson.
Ó Briain, O'Brien.

491. Some surnames take the article after Mac and Nic—*e.g.*:

Seumas Mac an Bháird, James Ward.
Nóra Nic an Ultaigh, Nora McNulty.

CHAPTER III.

The Adjective.

492. An adjective may be used either **predicatively** or **attributively.** An adjective is used *predicatively* when it is predicated of a noun by a verb, and in this case it is *usually* separated from the noun by the verb. "The way was *long*, the wind was *cold*." "The day is *fine*." "He made the mantles *green*." "Long," "cold," "fine," and "green" are used *predicatively*. An adjective is used *attributively* whenever it is not separated from the noun by the verb, and is not predicated of a noun by a verb: as, "The *infirm old* minstrel went wearily along." "He made the *green* mantles." The adjectives "*infirm*," "*old*," and "*green*" are here used *attributively*.

493. In Irish almost every common adjective can be used both predicatively and attributively. There are, however, one or two **exceptions:** droċ, bad, and deaġ, good, can *never* be used predicatively. If "bad" or "good" be used predicatively in the English sentence, we must use olc, bad, or maiṫ, good, in Irish. Never say or write tá sé deaġ for "he is good," but tá sé maiṫ, &c.

The adjective iomḋa is always used predicatively with is.

> Is iomḋa marcaċ do ġaḃ an tsliġe seo.
> ('Tis) many a rider (that) has gone this way.

ADJECTIVE USED ATTRIBUTIVELY.

(*a*) The Position of the Adjective.

494. As a general rule the adjective follows its noun in Irish: as, leaḃar mór, a big book; fear maiṫ, a good man.

Exceptions. (1) A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, always precedes its noun: as trí bá, three cows; dá ċirc, two hens. The *interrogative, possessive*, and most of the *indefinite adjectives* also precede their noun.

(2) Monosyllabic adjectives are frequently placed before the noun, but then the noun and adjective form a compound noun, and consequently the initial of the noun is aspirated, when possible. This is

always the case with adjectives: deaġ, good; droċ, bad; sean, old; and frequently with nuaḋ, new; and fíor, true. In this position the form of the adjectives never changes for number or case, but it is subject to the very same initial changes as if it were a noun.

sean-ḟear, an old man; sean-ḟir, old men.
treun-ḟear, a brave man; árd-rí, a high king.
an tsean-ḃean, the old woman;
láṁ an tsean-ḟir, the hand of the old man.

(3) When a name consists of two words the adjective frequently comes between them: as, "Sliaḃ geal gCua," "the bright Slieve Gua."

(*b*) Agreement of the Adjective.

When an adjective is used attributively and follows its noun, it agrees with the noun in gender, number, and case: as, bean ṁór, a big woman; mac an ḟir ṁóir, the son of the big man; na fir ṁóra, the big men.

For the aspiration and eclipsis of the adjective see par. 149.

495. Since the adjective in English has no inflexion for gender, it is quite a common thing to have one adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders. Sometimes in Irish we meet with one adjective qualifying two nouns of different genders or numbers; in such cases the adjective follows the

last noun, and agrees with it alone. However, the more usual method is to use the adjective after each noun: as,

Fear maith agus bean mhaith.
A good man and woman.

ADJECTIVE USED PREDICATIVELY.

(*a*) Position of the Adjective.

496. An adjective used predicatively always follows its noun, except when it is predicated by means of the verb is, in any of its forms, expressed or understood.

The men are good, Tá na fir maith.
The day is fine, Tá an lá breágh.

If the verb is be used in these sentences, notice the position of the adjective and the use of the pronoun.

The men are good, Is maith na fir iad.
The day is fine, Is breágh an lá é.

(*b*) Agreement of the Adjective.

An adjective used predicatively never agrees with its noun in either gender, number, or case: in other words, *the simple form of the adjective is always used.*

Moreover, it is never aspirated or eclipsed by the noun.

497. When the adjective comes immediately after the Past Tense or Conditional of is (*i.e.*, ba or budh),

its initial is generally aspirated, when possible; but in this case it is not the noun which causes aspiration.

Ba bhreágh an lá é. It was a fine day.

498. Notice the difference in meaning between the following:—

Rinne sé na sgeana geura	He made the sharp knives.
Rinne sé geur na sgeana Rinne sé na sgeana geur	He made the knives sharp.
Tá an bó mhór dubh.	The big cow is black.
Tá an bó dhubh mór.	The black cow is big.
Tá an oidhche dorcha fliuch.	The night is dark and wet.
Tá an oidhche fhliuch dorcha.	The wet night is dark.

499. Adjectives denoting fulness or a part of anything are usually followed by de with the dative case:

full of milk, lán de bhainne.

two barrels full of water, dá bharaile lán d' uisge.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

Position of the Words.

500. A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, goes before the noun.

ceithre capaill, four horses; sé caoirigh, six sheep.

an chéud bhuachaill, the first boy.

The words for 40, 60, 80, 200, 300, &c., also precede their nouns.

501. A numeral adjective, except those just mentioned, **consisting of two or more words, takes its noun immediately after the first part** of the numeral: as,

> ceithre capaill deug, fourteen horses.
> dá uan deug, twelve lambs.
> dá bhuin deug is trí fichid, seventy-two cows.

502. In **large numbers** there is a great difference between Irish and English with regard to the position of the words. **In Irish the unit digit comes first,** then the tens, next the hundreds, then the thousands, &c. This order is usually, though not always, followed. The hundreds and thousands may also precede the smaller numbers. The following examples are taken from Keating's Díonbhrollach, edited by David Comyn. It may be useful to remark again that éa and eu are the same :—

In the tenth chapter ; 'san deachmhadh caibidil.

519 A.D. ; aois do'n tighearna cúig céad a's naoideug.

In the twenty-fifth chapter of the book ; san g-cúigeadh caibidil fichead de'n leabhar.

As we read in the 33rd page of his history, amhail léightear 'san threas leathanach deug ar fichid d'á stáir.

52,000 of the Roman army, dá mhíle deug a's dá-fichid míle de shluagh Rómhánach.

1,166 years; ré bliaḋna ar ṫrí ficid ar ċéad ar ṁíle.

more than 400 years; tuilleaḋ agur ceiṫre ċéad bliaḋan.

503. The initials of the numerals undergo the very same changes with regard to aspiration and eclipsis as a noun would in the same position. See the examples in last paragraph.

504. The article prefixes t to aonṁaḋ, first, and to oċtṁaḋ, eighth, whether the following noun be masculine or feminine: as,

an t-oċtṁaḋ ḃean, the eighth woman.

Initial Changes produced by the Numerals.

505. Aon, **one**; dá, **two**; ceud, **first**; **and** trear, **third, aspirate the initial of the following word**: as,

aon ḃó aṁáin, one cow; an ċeud ḟear, the first man.

506. Aon, prefi_es t to the letter r; but has no effect on d or t: aon aral aṁáin, one ass; aon ċor aṁáin, one foot; aon tragart aṁáin, one priest; aon trlat aṁáin, one rod; aon treaḃac aṁáin, one hawk; dá ḟeaḃac, two hawks; aon taoḃ aṁáin, one side.

507. Seaċt, **seven**; oċt, **eight**; naoi, **nine**; **and** deiċ, **ten**; and their compounds **eclipse the initial**

of the following noun and prefix n to vowels; seacht mbá, seven cows; deich n-ubla, ten apples.

508. Trí, ceithre, cúig and sé have usually no effect on consonants (except ceud, 100, and míle, 1000); but trí, ceithre, sé, and dara prefix h to vowels: as, trí bá, three cows; trí h-asail, three asses; sé h-ubla, six apples; 'san dara h-áit, in the second place; trí cheud, 300; ceithre mhíle, 4000.

Although the rule just given is the one usually observed, nevertheless these numerals (except dara) sometimes aspirate, even in literature.

The Number of the Noun after the Numerals.

509. The noun after aon is always in the singular, even in such numbers as 11, 21, 31, 41, &c, as:

aon ubhall amháin, one apple.
aon ubhall deug, eleven apples.

510. When a noun has two forms in the plural, a short form and a long one, the short form is preferred after the numerals: as

naoi n-uaire, nine times; not naoi n-uaireannta.

511. In Modern Irish the numerals fiche, 20; dá fhichid, 40, &c., ceud, 100; míle, 1,000, are regarded as simple numeral adjectives which take the noun after them in the singular number.

512. This peculiar construction has arisen from the fact that these numerals are really *nouns*, and formerly governed the nouns after them in the *genitive plural*. As the genitive plural of most Irish nouns has exactly the same form as the nominative singular, the singular form has come to be almost universally used in Modern Irish after these numerals. Formerly they would use ceud ban and fiće caorać, but now we use ceud bean and fiće caora.

513. The word ceann and its plural cinn are often used with numerals *when the noun is not expressed in English*: as, Ca ṁeud leabar atá agat? Tá dá ċeann deug agam. How many books have you? I have twelve.

Tá ceann (or duine) aca inr an tiġ.
There is one of them in the house.

The Dual Number.

514. Dá, **"two," always takes the noun after it in the dual number** (neither singular nor plural), **which in every Irish noun has the same form as the dative singular.** This does not at all imply that the noun after dá is in the dative case. It is in the *dative singular form*, but it may be in any of the five cases, according to its use in the sentence. **All the cases of the dual number are alike, but the form of the genitive plural is often used for the genitive dual:** dá ḃuin, two cows; dá ġabainn, two smiths; lán a dá láiṁ or lán a dá láṁ, the full of his two hands.

515. The article which qualifies a noun in the **dual** number **will always be in the singular form.**

516. The adjective which qualifies a noun **in the** dual number **will be in the plural form,** but really **in** the dual number; **the pronouns** belonging to the noun **will be in the plural form;** and the **verb may,** but need not be; because in these parts of speech the dual number and the plural number **have** the **same** forms.

517. The **initial of an adjective*** qualifying and agreeing with a noun in the dual number **will be aspirated,** no matter what the gender or case of the noun may be: as,

ḋá ṫiġ ḋéuġ,	twelve houses.
an ḋá láiṁ ḃána,	the two white hands.
lán a ḋá láiṁ ḃeaġ,	the full of her two little **hands.**

518. The d **of** dá **is usually aspirated,** except **after** words ending in d, n, t, l, s (dentals), or **after the** possessive adjective a, her.

a dá ċois ḃeaga, her two little feet.

---

* Except demonstrative, possessive, indefinite, and **interrogative** adjectives.

The Possessive Adjective.

519. A possessive adjective can never be used without a noun: as, her father and his, a h-aṫair agus a aṫair.

520. The possessive adjectives always precede their nouns: as, mo ṁáṫair, my mother.

521. The possessives mo, my; do, thy; and a, his, aspirate the initial of their nouns; ár, our; ḃur, your; and a, their, cause eclipsis: as, a ḋán, his poem; do ṁáṫair, thy mother; a dán, her poem; a ndán, their poem.

522. If a noun begins with a vowel, mo, my, and do, thy, become m' and d' (t or ṫ); a, his, has no effect; a, her, prefixes h; and a, their, prefixes n; ár, our, and ḃur, your, also prefix n to vowels: as, a aṫair, his father; a h-aṫair, her father; a n-aṫair, their father; m'ḟear, my husband; d'eun, your bird; ár n-arán laeṫeaṁail, our daily bread; ḃur n-aḃrán, your song.

523. The possessive adjectives, when compounded with prepositions (see par. 186), have the same influence over the initials of their nouns as they have in their uncompounded state: as, dom ṁáṫair, to my mother; óm ṫír, from my country.

524. When the portion of a thing which belongs to one or more persons is to be expressed by the possessive adjectives, the name of the thing is preceded by cuıꝺ, with the possessive adjective before it. The name of the thing is in the genitive case—genitive singular if *quantity* be implied, but genitive plural if *number*—as, my bread, mo ċuıꝺ aṗáın (lit. my share of bread); his wine, a ċuıꝺ ꝼıona; their horses, a ᵹcuıꝺ capall.

This rule is not always followed; for instance, we sometimes find m'ḟıon, my wine; but mo ċuıꝺ ꝼıóna is more idiomatic.

525. The word cuıꝺ is never used in this way before the name of a single object.

mo leaḃaṗ, my book; a ᵹcapall, their horse.

a leaḃaṗ, his book; but a ċuıꝺ leaḃaṗ, his books.

a bó, her cow; a cuıꝺ bó, her cows.

526. The word cuıꝺ is not used in such phrases as mo ċoṗa, my feet; mo ṡúıle, my eyes; a ċnáṁa, his bones, &c.

527. When the emphatic suffix is used, some make it follow cuıꝺ; others make it follow the noun: as, mo ċuıꝺ-ṗe aṗáın or mo ċuıꝺ aṗáın-ṗe.

CHAPTER IV.

THE PRONOUN.

Personal Pronoun.

528 The personal pronouns agree with the nouns for which they stand in gender, number and person: as, He is a big man. Ir mór an fear é. They are big men. Ir mór na fir iad.

529. A personal pronoun which stands for a noun the gender of which is different from its sex, agrees in gender with the sex of the noun; as, Ir maiṫ an cailín í. She is a good girl. Ir olc an ċoṁurra é. He is a bad neighbour.

530. In Irish we have no neuter pronoun corresponding to the English "it;" hence, in translating "it," we must determine the gender of the Irish noun (masculine or feminine) and then use ré (he) or rí (she) accordingly:* as, It is terrible weather. Ir caillte an aimrir í. Is to-day Friday? An í an Aoine atá againn? Dob í an fírinne í. It was the truth. Tá an carúr agam, ní ḟuil ré trom. I have the hammer, it is not heavy.

* The word áit although feminine takes generally a masculine pronoun, as, Ir dear an áit é. It is a nice place.

Notice also—

Ir é
or
Ir í } mo ḃaraṁail, mo ṫuairim, &c. It is my opinion, &c., &c.

531. The pronoun tú, thou, is always used to translate the English "you" when only one person is referred to; as, How are you? Cionnas tá tú? What a man you are! Nach tú an fear!

532. The personal pronouns, whether nominative or accusative, always come after the verb; as, molann sé tú, he praises you.

533. The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used immediately after the verb IS in any of its forms expressed or understood; as, is é an fear láidir é. He is a strong man. An é a fuair é? Was it he who found it? Nach í d' ingean í? Is she not your daughter?

534. A personal pronoun which stands for a sentence, or part of a sentence, is third person singular, masculine gender. An rud adubhairt mé, is é adeirim arís. What I said, I repeat.

535. The accusative personal pronoun usually comes last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs: as, D'ḟág sé ar an áit sin iad. He left them at that place. Rug sé leis míle eile é. He brought it with him another mile. D'ḟágas im ḋiaiḋ é. I left it after me.

Relative Pronoun.

536. The relative particle follows its antecedent and precedes its verb: as, an fear a ċodlóċas, the man who will sleep.

537. The relative particle, whether expressed or understood, always causes aspiration: as, an fear bhías ag obair, the man who will be at work.

538. The relative when preceded by a preposition causes eclipsis (unless the verb be in the Past Tense). When the relative a signifies "all that" or "what" it causes eclipsis: as, an áit i n-a b-fuil sé, the place in which he is; a bhfuil i mBaile-Átha-Cliath, all that is in Dublin.

539. When the relative is governed by a preposition and followed by a verb in the Past Tense, the relative combines with ro (the old sign of the Past Tense), and does not eclipse: an áit ar thuit Aodh, the place where (in which) Hugh fell.

540. The eight verbs which do not admit of the compounds of ro being used before them (see par. 279) form an exception to the last rule: as, an tír i n-a dtáinig sé, the country into which he came.

541. In English, when the relative or interrogative pronoun is governed by a preposition, the pronoun very often comes before the governing word: as, *What are you speaking about? The man that he gave the book to is here.* In colloquial Irish it is a very common practice to separate the relative particle from the preposition which governs it; but instead of using a simple preposition at the end of the sentence, as in English, we use a **prepositional pronoun.** Thus we

can say—an ḟear aᵹ a ḃḟuil an ḃó, or more usually, an ḟear a ḃḟuil an ḃó aiᵹe,* the man who has the cow; an ḟear a ḋíolar an capall leir, or an ḟear leṗ ḋíolar an capall, the man to whom I sold the horse.

542. The forms ᵭarb or ᵭarab, ᵭarḃ, leṗḃ, marḃ, &c., are compounds of a preposition, relative particle; "ro," the sign of the Past Tense; and ba or buḋ the Past Tense of ir.

ᵭarḃ = ᵭo + a + ro + ba = to whom was.
leṗḃ = le + a + ro + ba = with or by whom was.

as, bean ᵭarḃ ainm Ḃriᵹiᵭ, a woman whose name was Brigid.

543. As the accusative case of the relative particle has exactly the same form as the nominative, the context must determine, in those tenses in which the verb has no distinct termination for the relative, whether the relative particle is the subject or object of the verb; an ḟear a ḃuail Seaᵹán, may mean, The man whom John struck, or The man who struck John.

Translation of the Genitive Case of the English Relative.

544. The Irish relative has no inflection for case; hence, in order to translate the English word "whose"

---

*An ḟear ᵹo ḃ-ḟuil an ḃó aiᵹe is also used.

when not an interrogative, **we must use one of the prepositions** (ag, do, i) **+ relative particle + possessive adjective** (before the noun).

The man whose son was sick.

an fear { dá / agá / i n-a } raiḃ a ṁac tinn.

but dá, agá, or 'gá, i n-a are often shortened to a, go, and ná; hence the above sentence in colloquial Irish would be—

an fear { a / go / 'ná } raiḃ a ṁac tinn.

The woman whose son is sick visited us yesterday.

an bean úd { go / 'gá / &c. } ḃfuil a mac tinn ṫáinig sí ar ċuairt inné ċugainn.

545. To translate the English relative pronoun when governed by an active participle, we employ a somewhat similar construction; as—

The hare that the hounds are pursuing.
An girrḟiaḋ gá ḃfuil na gaḋair ar a lorg (or ar a tóir, or ag tóraiġeaċt air).

The man whom I am striking.
An fear atáim dá ḃualaḋ (or gá ḃualaḋ).

546. The relative a meaning *all that, what,* may itself be genitive; as, trian a raib ann, a third of what were there. "Beir beannacht óm chroidhe chum a maireann ar bhánchnoic Éireann óig." "Bear a blessing from my heart to all those who live on the fair hills of Holy Ireland."

The relative a in this sentence is genitive case being governed by chum (see par. 603).

CHAPTER V.

The Verb.

547. As a general rule the verb precedes its nominative: as, tá sé, he is; bhí an fear ann, the man was there.

Exceptions. (1) When the subject is a relative or an interrogative pronoun the verb comes after its subject; as,

An buachaill a bhuaileas mé. The boy who strikes me.
Cad atá agat? What have you?

(2) In a relative sentence the nominative though not a relative pronoun may precede its verb; but as the noun is usually far separated from the verb, a

personal pronoun is used as a sort of temporary subject, so that really the noun and its pronoun are nominative to the same verb: as,

An fear atá 'na ṡeasaṁ ag an doras buail sé an capall. The man who is standing at the door struck the horse.

Compare the similar use of the French pronoun CE; or the English "He that shall persevere unto the end, *he* shall be saved."

(3) The nominative often precedes its verb in poetry, and sometimes even in prose.

Raṫ go raiḃ ort! Success to you!

548. Transitive verbs govern the accusative case; and the usual order of words is, Verb, Subject, Object. When the subject or object is a relative or an interrogative pronoun it precedes the verb.

Do rinne Seaġán an bád sin. John made that boat.
Do ḃuail an buaċaill é. The boy struck him.

For the conditions under which a verb is aspirated or eclipsed, see pars. 21(g) and 26(e).

Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

549. The most frequent use of the present subjunctive is with the conjunction go, **expressing a wish. If the wish be negative use** nár (except with raiḃ).

Go mbeannuiġiḋ Dia ḋuit!	May God bless you!
Go ḃfóiriḋ Dia orainn!	God help us!
Go dtéiġ tú slán!	Safe home! (may you go safely)!
Nár léiġiḋ Dia sin!	May God not allow that! God forbid!
Go raiḃ maiṫ agat!	Thank you!
Ná raiḃ maiṫ agat!	No thanks to you!

550. The subjunctive is also used after nó go, go or aċt go, all meaning "until"; and after muna, "unless," but only when there is an element of doubt.

Fan annso go dtagad arís.	Stay here till I come again.
Muna gcreidiḋ riḃ mé.	Unless you believe me.
Muna dtugaiḋ tú an t-airgead dom.	Unless you give me the money.

551. sul a, sul fa, sul má, sul dá, **all meaning "before," when used with reference to an event not considered as an actual occurrence,** take the subjunctive; as,

Imṫiġ leat sul a dtagaiḋ an maiġistir. Be off with you, before the master comes.

552. The past subjunctive is found after dá or muna to express a supposed condition. They may also take a conditional. In translating the English phrases "if he believed," "if he had believed" **(im-**

plying that he did not believe), we use ᴅá with the past subjunctive; but as this Tense is identical in form with the Imperfect Tense, it may be said that it is the Imperfect Tense which is employed in this case.

If you were to see Donal on the following day you would pity him.

Dá ḃfeicfeá Domhnall ar maidin lá ar n-a ḃárac bad ṫruag leat é.

If you were to give me that book.

Dá dtugtá-sa domsa an leabar sin.

If it were true for him. Dá mbad fíor dó é.

All the particles given above can also be used with the past subjunctive in reference to past time.

553. In the passive voice the present and past subjunctive are identical in form with the Present and Imperfect Tenses (respectively) of the Indicative Mood.

May it be worn out well. Go gcaiṫtear go maiṫ é.
May it never be worn out. Nár ċaiṫtear go deo é.
If it were worn out. Dá gcaiṫtí é.

Relative Form of the Verb.

554. The relative form of the verb is used after the relative particle a, *when it is the subject of the verb*; (but never after the negative relative naċ, *which* or *who...not*). It has a distinct form in two, and only

two, Tenses—the *Present* and the *Future*. In these two Tenses it ends in ᴀṗ or eᴀṗ. In all the other Tenses the third person singular is used after the relative pronoun. The verb is aspirated after the relative, expressed or understood; but nᴀċ eclipses.

555. The relative is distinctly marked by the position of the words; as—

Ꞇá ᴀn ꝼeᴀṗ ᴀᵹ obᴀıṗ,	The man is at work.
Ꭿn ꝼeᴀṗ ᴀꞇá ᴀᵹ obᴀıṗ,	The man who is at work.
Ꭿn ꝼeᴀṗ ᴀ ḃıᴀṗ,	The man who will be.
Ꭿn ꝼeᴀṗ nᴀċ mbéıḋ ᴀnn,	The man who will not be there.
Ꭿn cᴀpᴀll ᴀꞇá ᴀmuıᵹ ᴀṗ ᴀn mbóꞇᴀṗ,	The horse which is outside on the road.

In the case of the verb ꞇá the Habitual, not the simple Present, has the relative form.

556. In those Tenses where there is no distinct form for the relative the context alone can determine whether the relative is the subject or the object of the verb. See par. 543.

557. Cıonnuṗ, how; nuᴀıṗ, when; and mᴀṗ, as, are followed by the relative form of the verb in the Present and Future, and the verb is aspirated; but with cıonnuṗ ᴀ, cıᴀ ᴀn ċᴀoı, cıᴀ ᴀn nóṗ, cıᴀ ᴀn moḋ, or any

other such locutions, the eclipsing ᴀ or ı (*in which*) is used before the verb. Before the Past Tense, of course, ᴀɼ (ᴀ+ɼo) is used. Cıonnuɼ ᴀ ḃꝼuıl ᴛú? How are you?

Ṁᴀɼ is also followed by the ordinary Present and Future.

558. **Sul, "before," has two usages.** It may be followed by the relative forms—*e.g.*, ꞅul ṫıocꝼᴀꞅ ꞅé, ꞅul ṫáınıᵹ ꞅé; or else it may be followed by one of the particles ᴀ, má, ꝼá, ᴅá, all of which eclipse.

559. After these particles, the Subjunctive Mood is often used when the event is future and uncertain, or contains a mental element: as—

> Imṫıᵹ leᴀᴛ ꞅul ᴀ ḃꝼeıcıḋ ꞅé ṫú.
>
> Be off (with you) before he sees you (*i.e.*, so that he may not see you).

It is not correct to eclipse after the word ꞅul, as ꞅul ᴅᴛáınıᵹ, although sometimes done.

560. The **relative form** of the Present Tense is frequently **used as a historic present,** even when no relative occurs in the sentence: as—

Noċᴛᴀꞅ Eıꞃeṁón ᴅóıḃ, Eremon revealed to them.

The Verbal Noun and its Functions.

561. "Is there an Infinitive in Irish?" We give here Father O'Leary's answer to his own question, **"Certainly not." In Irish there is neither an infinitive mood nor a present participle, both functions being discharged by the verbal noun.** It follows from this statement that *there is no such thing as a sign of the infinitive mood in Irish.*

Is maiṫ liom siuḃal.	I wish *to walk*.
Duḃras leis gan teaċt.	I told him not* *to come*.
Tá ormsa feiṫeaṁ.	I have *to wait*.
Níor ṁaiṫ liom beannuġaḋ dó.	I did not wish *to salute* him.
Ní ṫig le mála folaṁ seasaṁ.	An empty bag cannot *stand*.

562. In the above examples, and in thousands of similar ones, *the Irish verbal noun is an exact equivalent in sense of the English infinitive, sign and all.* If any one of the prepositions do (or a), le or ċum, be used before the verbal nouns in the above examples, the result is utter nonsense. Now consider the following examples :—

Is maiṫ liom an bóṫar do ṡiuḃal.	I wish to walk the road.
Is maiṫ liom focal do labairt.	I wish to speak a word.

---

* *Not* before the English infinitive is translated by gan (a prep., without).

Duḃairt m'aṫair liom gan an capall do ḋíol.	My father told me not to sell the horse.
Is cóir ḋuit an feur do ḃaint.	You ought to cut the grass.
An féidir leat an ċaint do ṫuigsint?	Can you understand the conversation?
Is mian liom litir do sgríoḃaḋ.	I wish to write a letter.

563. The *preposition* do in the above examples and ones like them between the noun and the verbal noun, is very often, in the spoken language, softened to a: and this a is not heard before or after a vowel: *as*,

> Is cóir ḋuit coṁairle 'ġlacaḋ.
> You ought to take advice.

564. In any sentence of the first set of examples there is question of only one thing; *e.g.*, siuḃal, teaċt, feiṫeaṁ, &c., but in each of the sentences of the second set *there is a relation between two things: e.g.*, bóṫar and siuḃal, focal and laḃairt, &c., and to express this relationship a *preposition is used between the two nouns.* If the relation between the nouns be altered the preposition must also be altered, as—

Tá bóṫar agam le siuḃal,	I have a road to walk.
Tá focal agam le laḃairt,	I have a word to say.
Tá capall agam le díol,	I have a horse for sale (to sell).
Tá feur agat le baint,	You have grass to cut.

565. There is still another preposition which can be used between the nouns to express another alteration in meaning—

Tá teaċ ċum comnuiġṫe agam.	I have a house to live in.
Tá capall ċum marcuiġeaċta aige.	He has a horse to ride on.

If in any one of these sentences the wrong preposition be employed the proper meaning cannot be expressed.

566. In translating the simple English infinitive of an intransitive verb, use the simple verbal noun in Irish: as,

He told me to go to Cork.	Duḃairt sé liom dul go Corcaiġ.
An empty bag cannot stand.	Ní ṫig le mála folaṁ seasaṁ.
It is impossible to write without learning.	Ní féidir sgríoḃaḋ gan foġlaim.
I prefer to walk.	Is fearr liom siuḃal.
He cannot stand.	Ní ṫig leis seasaṁ.
Tell him to sit down.	Abair leis suiḋe síos.
Tell them to go away.	Abair leo imṫeaċt,

567. When the English intransitive infinitive expresses purpose (*i.e.*, the gerundial infinitive), **use the preposition** le.

He came to stay,	Táinig sé le fanaṁaint.
I have a word to say,	Tá focal agam le labairt.
You are to wait,	Tá tú le feiṫeaṁ.
I am to go,	Táim le dul.

568. When the English verb is transitive and in the simple infinitive (no purpose implied) **use the preposition** do or the softened form a.

My father told me to buy a horse.	Duḃairt m'aṫair liom capall do ċeannaċ.
You ought to have cut the grass.	Ba ċóir ḋuit an feur do ḃaint.
He told me not to shut the door.	Duḃairt sé liom gan an doras do ḋúnaḋ.
Would you like to read this book?	An mian leat an leaḃar so do léiġeaḋ?

569. When the English infinitive is transitive, and also expresses purpose, use either ċum or le before the noun which is the object of the English infinitive, and do before the verbal noun in Irish; ċum takes

the noun after it in the genitive; le becomes leis before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.

He will come to judge the living and the dead.	Tiocfaiḋ Sé ċum breiṫeaṁnais do ṫabairt ar ḃeoḋaiḃ agus ar ṁarḃaiḃ.
He came to buy a horse.	Ṫáiniġ sé le capall do ċeannaċ.
He went to strike the men.	Ċuaiḋ sé ċum na ḃfear do ḃualaḋ.
He went to strike the man.	Ċuaiḋ sé leis an ḃfear do ḃualaḋ.
He said that to praise the girl.	Duḃairt sé sin leis an gcailín do ṁolaḋ.
He came to buy the horse.	Ṫáiniġ sé ċum an ċapaill a ċeannaċ.

570. We can also express the above by means of the preposition do alone, but in this case we must put the verbal noun before the other noun. This latter will, of course, be now in the genitive case, because one noun governs another in the genitive case. This is the *only governing power the verbal noun has in Irish.*

He came to buy the horse.	Ṫáiniġ sé do ċeannaċ an ċapaill.
He went to strike the man.	Ċuaiḋ sé do ḃualaḋ an ḟir.

Did you come to strike John?	An dtángais do ḃualaḋ Ṡeaġáin?
He came to make fun.	Ṫáinig sé do ḋeunaṁ grinn.
They came to make war.	Ṫángadar do ḋeunaṁ cogaiḋ.

N.B.—This latter method is not often used in the spoken language.

571. When the English infinitive is passive, and also expresses purpose, use le.

He is to be hanged.	Tá sé le croċaḋ, or le ḃeiṫ croċta.
The milk is to be drunk.	Tá an bainne le h-ól (&c.).
Cows are to be bought at the fair.	Tá ba le ceannaċ ar an aonaċ.
The grass is to be cut.	Tá an feur le baint.
The house is to be sold.	Tá an teaċ le díol.
There is no one to be seen on the road.	Ní ḟuil duine ar biṫ le feicsint ar an mbóṫar.

572. When a personal pronoun is the object of the English infinitive and the latter does not express purpose, we translate as follows:—

You ought not to strike me.	Ní cóir ḋuit mé do ḃualaḋ. Ní cóir ḋuit mo ḃualaḋ.
I wished to strike him.	Ba ṁian liom é do ḃualaḋ. Ba ṁian liom a ḃualaḋ.

I wish to praise her.	Is mian liom í do ṁolaḋ. Is mian liom a molaḋ.
It is not right to strike them.	Ní cóir iad do ḃualaḋ. Ní cóir a mḃualaḋ.
It is a bad thing to wound me.	Is olc an rud mé do gonaḋ. Is olc an rud mo gonaḋ.
I cannot understand it.	Ní ṫig liom a ṫuigsint (its-understanding).
Could you tell me who it was?	An féidir leat a* innsint dom cia 'rḃ'é?
A desire to kill them came upon me.	Ṫáinig mian a marḃṫa orm-sa.

In this sentence marḃṫa is the genitive case (after the noun mian) of the verbal noun marḃaḋ.

573. When the English infinitive governing a personal pronoun expresses purpose, we translate as follows:—

He came to strike me.	Ṫáinig sé dom ḃualaḋ. Ṫáinig sé le mé do ḃualaḋ.
I went to strike them.	Ċuaiḋ mé d'á mḃualaḋ. Ċuaiḋ mé le h-iad do ḃualaḋ.

* Whenever the object of the verbal noun is a phrase, it cannot be put in the genitive case, but the possessive adjective a is used before the verbal noun.

They are coming to wound us.	Tá siad ag teaċt dár ngonaḋ. Tá siad ag teaċt le sinn do ġonaḋ.

If we used the indefinite form in this last sentence we would get—

They are coming to wound us.	Táṫar ag teaċt dár ngonaḋ. Táṫar ag teaċt le sinn do ġonaḋ.

574. There is no present participle in Irish. **The verbal noun when preceded by the preposition ag performs the function of the English present participle.**

They are coming.	Tá siad ag teaċt.
The tree is growing.	Tá an crann ag fás.
I am going away.	Táim ag imṫeaċt.
The children are playing.	Tá na paisdí ag imirt.

575. The verbal noun in each of the above is dative case, governed by the preposition ag.

576. When the English present participle governs an objective case, the object if a noun will follow the verbal noun in Irish and will be in the genitive case.

He is cutting the grass.	Tá sé ag baint an ḟéir.
She was stretching out her hand.	Ḃí sí ag síneaḋ a láiṁe amaċ.

Are you reading the letter?	Ḃfuil tú ag léiġeaḋ na litre?
Who was beating the child?	Cia ḃí ag bualaḋ an leinḃ?

577. If the object of the English present participle be a personal pronoun we cannot translate as in the above sentences, because the pronouns have no genitive case; hence instead of using the personal pronouns **we must employ the possessive adjectives. Possessive adjectives must always precede the nouns which they qualify.**

He is striking me.	Tá sé 'ġam (or agom) bualaḋ (lit. he is at my beating).
Are you breaking it?	Ḃfuil tú 'ġá (aga) ḃriseaḋ?
Are you breaking them?	Ḃfuil tú 'ġá (aga) mbris-eaḋ?
He is praising us.	Tá sé ġár (ag ár) molaḋ.
Is he not burning them?	Nac ḃfuil sé 'ġa (aga) ndóġaḋ?
They are not striking her.	Ní ḟuil siad 'ġá (aga) bualaḋ.

Note carefully the initial effects of the possessive adjectives on the verbal nouns after them.

578. Preceded by ar, the Verbal Noun has the force of a Present Participle Passive, denoting a continued or habitual state: as,

Ní ḟuil an teanga sin ar labairt anois.	That language is not spoken now.
Tá an ċruit ar croċaḋ ar an ngéig.	The harp is hanging on the bough.
Sgeul ar leanaṁaint.	A continued story.

In this idiom ar neither aspirates nor eclipses.

579. With iar, *after* (eclipsing), **the Verbal Noun has the force of a Perfect Participle:** as,

Iar dteaċt i n-Éirinn do Ṗádraig,
Patrick having come into Ireland.

But in this idiom iar is usually shortened to ar: as, ar dteaċt, &c., the eclipsis being retained. In colloquial language the Verbal Noun is commonly aspirated, not eclipsed, by ar in this usage.

580. Gan is the word used to express negation with the Verbal Noun: as, gan teaċt, not to come.

Abair le Brian gan an gort do ṫreabaḋ.
Tell Brian not to plough the field.

581. Gan with the Verbal Noun has the force of the Passive Participle in English with ***un*** **prefixed:** as,

Mo ċúig púint olna agus iad gan sníoṁ,
My five pounds of wool, and they *un*spun.

582. The genitive of the Verbal Noun is often used where a relative or infinitive clause would be used in English: as,

> Níor fágaḋ fear innisṫe sgéil,
> There was not a man left *to tell the tidings*.
>
> Cailín deas crúiḋṫe na mbó,
> The pretty girl *who milks* the cows (lit. of the milking, &c.).

583. The following examples will be studied with advantage. They are culled from Father O'Leary's Mion-ċainṫ:—

Someone is striking me.	Táṫar 'gam bualaḋ.
I am being struck.	Táim dom bualaḋ.
Someone is striking the dog.	Táṫar ag bualaḋ an gadair.
The dog is being struck.	Tá an gadar dá bualaḋ.
Someone is breaking the stones.	Táṫar ag briseaḋ na gcloċ.
The stones are being broken.	Tá na cloċa dá mbriseaḋ.
They used to kill people.	Ḃiṫí ag marḃaḋ daoine.
People used to be killed.	Ḃíoḋ daoine dá marḃaḋ.
They used to buy horses.	Ḃiṫí ag ceannaċ capall.
Horses used to be bought.	Ḃíoḋ capaill dá gceannaċ.

We (or they) will be digging potatoes.	Béiḋfear ag baint ṗrá-taoi.
Potatoes will be dug.	Béiḋ prátaoi dá mbaint.
We shall have dug the potatoes.	Béiḋ na prátaoi bainte againn.
If they were breaking stones they would not be cold.	Dá mbéiḋfí ag briseaḋ cloċ ní béiḋfí fuar.
If they are breaking stones they are not cold.	Má táṫar ag briseaḋ cloċ ní fuiltear fuar.

THE VERB IS.

584. A definite noun is one limited by its nature or by some accompanying word to a definite individual or group.

The following are definite nouns:—

(*a*) The name of a person or place (but not a class name like Sasanaċ).

(*b*) A noun preceded by the definite article.

(*c*) A noun preceded by a demonstrative adjective.

(*d*) A noun preceded by gaċ (because it means each taken individually).

(*e*) A noun followed by any other definite noun in the genitive case.

Any noun not included in the above classes is an **indefinite noun.**

585. Whenever a definite noun is the subject of a verb in English, and the verb is is employed in translating into Irish, a personal pronoun must immediately precede the definite noun in Irish.

John is the man. Is é Seaghán an fear

WHEN TO USE THE VERB IS.

586. (*a*) **When the verb "to be" in English is followed by a definite noun, use is**: as,

I am John.	Is mise Seaghán.
It is the man.	Is é an fear é.
You are my brother.	Is tú mo dhearbhráthair.
James is the man.	Is é Seumas an fear.
It is the woman of the house.	Is í bean an tighe í.
Are you not my friend?	Nach tú mo chara?
He is not my father.	Ní h-é sin m'athair.

All sentences of this class are called "**Identification sentences.**"

N.B.—"He" in sentences of identity is usually translated by é sin.

(*b*) **When the verb "to be" in English is followed by an indefinite noun is or tá may be used, but with very different meanings.** Whenever we use the verb is in such a sentence we **convey** the idea of "**classification,**" or *species*: **as,** Is

ainmiṁiġe bó. A cow is an animal, &c.; or we *lay stress on what the person or thing is at the time being*, without any thought that he has become what he, or it, is. For instance, a father, enumerating to a friend the various positions in life of his children, may say, Is ceannuiḋe Seumas, is sagart Seaġán, agus is fear dliġe Míċeál: James is a merchant, John a priest, and Michael is a lawyer. He should not use tá in such a case, as he considers simply what each is at the time being. When tá is used we convey the idea that the person or thing *has become* what he (or it) is, *and that he (or it) was not always so*. Suppose a father is telling what professions his sons have adopted, he should say, tá Seumas 'na ċeannuiḋe, &c. **In such constructions the verb tá must be followed by the preposition i or a, and a suitable possessive adjective.**

(*c*) **The difference between tá and is** is well exemplified by the two sentences is fear é and tá sé 'na ḟear, both meaning "He is a man." If we see a figure approach us in the dark, and after looking closely at it we discover it to be a man, our correct phraseology would then be, is fear é. But when we say tá sé 'na ḟear we convey a very different idea. We mean that the person of whom we are speaking is no longer a boy, he has now reached manhood. If anyone were speaking to you of a person as if he were a mere boy, and you wished to correct him, you should use the phrase tá sé 'na ḟear.

(*d*) **When the indefinite noun after the verb "to be" in English is qualified by an adjective, the verb** ıs **or** tá **may be used** according to the idea we wish to convey. If we wish to express a "**condition sentence**" (*i.e.*, one which has reference to the state or condition of the subject at the time in question), we use tá; otherwise we employ ıs, *e.g.*,

He is a small man.	Tá sé 'na ḟear beag.
He is a useful man.	Tá sé 'na ḟear ḟóġanta.
She was a good woman	Ḃí sí 'na mnaoi ṁaiṫ.

(*e*) When the verb ıs is employed in such sentences *there is a choice of two constructions.* In the second construction (as given in the examples below), we emphasise the adjective, by making it the prominent idea of the sentence. The definite article must be used in the second construction.

Is lá breáġ é. Is breáġ an lá é.	It is a fine day.
Is oiḋċe fuar í. Is fuar an oiḋċe í.	It is a cold night.
Is bó breáġ í sin. Is breáġ an bó í sin.	That is a fine cow.
Naċ oileán deas é sin? Naċ deas an t-oileán é sin?	Isn't that a pretty island?

(*f*) **When a simple adjective follows the verb "to be" in English, either ıṗ or ᴛá may be employed** in translating, as,

Honey is sweet, ıṗ mılıṗ mıl or ᴛá mıl mılıṗ.
He is strong, ıṗ láıᴅıṗ é or ᴛá ṗé láıᴅıṗ.

587. The beginning of a sentence is naturally the place of greatest prominence, and is usually occupied in Irish by the verb. **When, however, any idea other than that contained in the verb is to be emphasised, it is placed immediately after the verb ıṗ, and the rest of the sentence is thrown into the relative form.**

For example, "We went to Derry yesterday," would be generally translated: Ċuaıḋ ṗınn ᵹo Ꝺoıṗe ınᴅé: but it may also take the following forms according to the word emphasised.

We went to Derry yesterday.	lṗ ṗınne ᴅo ċuaıḋ ᵹo Ꝺoıṗe ınᴅé.
We went to *Derry* yesterday.	lṗ ᵹo Ꝺoıṗe ᴅo ċuaıḋ ṗınn ınᴅé.
We went to Derry *yesterday*.	lṗ ınᴅé ᴅo ċuaıḋ ṗınn ᵹo Ꝺoıṗe.

588. The Verb ıs is then used.

(1) To express **Identity,** *e.g.*, lṗ é Conn an ṗí.
(2) " **Classification,** " lṗ ṗí Conn.
(3) " **Emphasis,** " lṗ ınᴅé ᴅo ċuaıḋ ṗınn ᵹo Ꝺoıṗe.

POSITION OF WORDS WITH ις.

589. The predicate of the sentence always follows ις: as,

Dermot is a man,	ιр ғеаp Ꝺιаpmuιꝺ.
They are children,	ιр páιpꝺí ιаꝺ.
John is a priest,	ιр ѕаᵹаpт Seаᵹán.
Coal is black,	ιр ꝺuḃ ᵹuаl.
A cow is an animal,	ιр аιnιṁíᵹe bó.
Turf is not coal,	Ní ᵹuаl móιn.
Is it a man?	An ғеаp é?

590. Sentences of Identification—*e.g.*, *Conn is the king*—**form an apparent exception.** The fact is that in this sentence either the word "Conn" or "the king" may be the *logical predicate.* In English "king" is the *grammatical predicate*, but in Irish it is the *grammatical subject*, and "Conn" is the *grammatical predicate.* Hence the sentence will be, **ιр é** Conn аn pí.

591. In such sentences, when two nouns or a pronoun and noun are connected by the verb ιр, as a general rule, **the more particular and individual of the two is made grammatical predicate** in Irish. *The converse usually holds in English.* For instance, we say in English "I am the messenger," but in Irish ιр mιрe аn тeаċтаιpe (lit. "the messenger is I"). Likewise with the following:—

You are the man,	ιр тú аn ғеаp.
He is the master,	ιр é рın аn mаιᵹιртιp.
We are the boys,	ιр рınne nа buаċаιllí.

592. Sentences like "It is Donal," "It is the messenger," &c., are translated is é Domhnall é, is é an teachtaire é. Here "é Domhnall" and "é an teachtaire" are the grammatical predicates, and the second é in each case is the subject.

It is the master, Is é <u>an maiġistir</u> é.

He is the master, Is é <u>sin</u> an maiġistir.

(The underlined words are the predicates.)

593. In recent times we often find such sentences as "Is é an maiġistir," "Is é an fear," &c., for "It is the master," "It is the man," in which the last é, the subject of the sentence, is omitted.

Translation of the English Secondary Tenses.

594. The English **Present Perfect Tense** is translated by means of the Present Tense of the verb tá, followed by d' éis (or tar éis) and the verbal noun. When d' éis comes immediately before the verbal noun, the latter will be in the genitive case; but when d' éis is separated from the verbal noun by the object of the English verb, the verbal noun will be preceded by the preposition do, and will be dative case.

He wrote, Do sgríoḃ sé.
He has just written, Tá sé d' éis sgríoḃṫa.
He broke the window, Do ḃris sé an fuinneog.
He has broken the window, Tá sé d' éis na fuinneoige do ḃriseaḋ.
He has just died, Tá sé d' éis báis d'faġáil.

595. The word "*just*" in these sentences is not translated into Irish, and the word after ᴅ' éıꞅ is in the genitive case.

596. When the English verb is transitive there is another very neat method of translating the secondary tenses. As already stated, there is no verb "*to have*" in Irish: its place is supplied by the verb ᴛá and the preposition aᵹ. Thus, "*I have a book*" is, Ꞇá leaḃaꞃ aᵹam. A similar construction may be used in translating the secondary tenses of an English transitive verb. The following sentences will illustrate the construction:—

I have written the letter,	Ꞇá an lıᴛıꞃ ꞅᵹꞃíoḃᴛa aᵹam.
I have struck him,	Ꞇá ꞅé buaılᴛe aᵹam.
Have you done it yet?	Ḃꞃuıl ꞅé ᴅeunᴛa aᵹaᴛ ḟóꞅ?
I have broken the stick,	Ꞇá an maıᴅe bꞃıꞅᴛe aᵹam.

597. The English **Pluperfect** and **Future Perfect** are translated in the same manner as the Present Perfect, except that the Past and Future Tenses respectively of ᏆÁ must be used instead of the Present, as above. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

He died,	Ḟuaıꞃ ꞅé báꞅ.
He had just died,	Ḃí ꞅé ᴅ' éıꞅ báıꞅ ᴅ' ḟaġáıl.
He had broken the chair,	Ḃí ꞅé ᴅ' éıꞅ na caṫaoıꞃeaċ ᴅo ḃꞃıꞅeaḋ. Ḃí an ċaṫaoıꞃ bꞃıꞅᴛe aıᵹe.

The window has just been broken by a stone,	Táṫar d' éis na fuinneoige do briseaḋ le cloiċ.
I had written the letter,	Ḃí an litir sgríoḃṫa agam. Ḃíos d' éis na litre do sgríoḃaḋ.
I shall have finished my work before you will be ready,	Ḃéad d' éis críċe do ċur ar mo ċuid oibre sul a mbéir réiḋ (ollaṁ), Ḃéiḋ mo ċuid oibre críoċ-nuiġṫe agam sul a mbéir réiḋ.

Prepositions after Verbs.

598. We give here a few verbs which require a preposition after them in Irish, although they require none in English :—

Géillim do,	I obey.
Uṁluiġim do,	,,
Cuidiġim le,	I assist.
Innsim do, Deirim le,	I tell.
Tugaim ar,	I persuade, prevail over.
Tugaim fá,	I endeavour.
Iarraim ar,	I ask (beseech).
Fiafruiġim de,	I ask (enquire).
Geallaim do,	I promise.
Beannuiġim do,	I bless, I salute.

Cuiṁniġim ar,	I remember.
Beirim ar,	I catch, I overtake.
Gleusaim ar,	I prepare (gleus ort, get ready).
Léigim do,	I allow, permit.
Coṁairliġim do,	I advise.
Maiṫim do,	I forgive, pardon.
Freagraim do,	I answer.
Fóirim ar,	I help.
Éiriġeann liom,	I succeed (lit. It arises with me).
Tigim le,	I confirm, I corroborate.
Tig liom	I can.
Sgaoilim do,	I loose.
Impiġim ar,	I beg, I beseech.
Taiṫniġim le,	I please.

599. Many verbs require prepositions different from those required by their English equivalents.

Laḃraim ar,	I speak of.
Fanaim le,	I wait for.
Tráċtaim ar,	I treat of.
Ceilim ar,	I conceal from.
Sgaraim le,	I separate from.
Cuirim fios ar,	I send for.
Laḃraim le,	I speak to.
Deirim le,	I say to.
Ar . . . le,	say, said to (ar is used only in quotation).

Beirim aġaiḋ ar,	I face (for) (a place).
Ḋeunaim magaḋ fá,	I make fun of, I mock.
Criṫim fá,	I tremble at.
Bainim le (also do),	I belong to, I appertain to.
Beirim buaiḋ ar,	I win a victory over.
Táim boḋruiġṫe ag,	I am bothered with.
Éistim le,	I listen to.
Dar le,	It seems to.
Glaoiḋim ar,	I call for.
Cinnim ar,	I excel or surpass in.
Guiḋim ar,	I pray for; also, I beseech. (guiḋ orainn, pray for us.)
Feuċ ar,	look at (feuċ orṫa, Look at them; feuċ iad, Examine or try them).
Fágaim slán ag,	I bid farewell *to*.
Leanaim de,	I stick to.
Beirim ar...ar,	I take hold of...by: as, He caught me by the hand. Rug sé ar láiṁ orm. Catch her by the hand, Beir ar láiṁ uirri.
Díolam le...ar,	I sell to...for. He sold me a cow for £10. Díol sé bó liom ar deiċ bpúntaiḃ.
Caiṫim le,	I throw at. The women threw stones at them. Do ċaiṫeadar na mná cloċa leo.

The Negative Adverb—Not.

600. Young students experience great difficulty in translating the English negative adverb—"**not.**" We here give the various ways of translating "not."

Not, with the **Imperative mood,** is translated by			ná.
,, ,, **Subjunctive** ,, ,,			nár.
,, ,, **Verbal Noun** ,,			gan.
Indicative Mood	Past Tense	statement,	níor.
		question,	nár or naċar.
	All other tenses	statement,	ní.
		question,	naċ.

"**If ... not**" is translated by muna:* **if the verb be in the past tense use** munar.

All the above forms are used in **principal sentences only.** In **dependent sentences "that...not"** is always translated by naċ, except **in the past tense, indicative mood,** when nár or naċar must be used.

How to answer a question. Yes—No.

601. (*a*) In Irish there are no fixed words for "**Yes**" or "No." **As a general rule in replying to questions, "Yes" or "No" is translated by using the same verb and tense as has been employed in the question.**

---

* Pronounced morru.

The subject of the verb used in reply need not be expressed, except when it is contained in the verb ending. In English we frequently use a double reply, as "Yes, I will." "No, I was not," &c. In Irish we use only one reply.

Bfuil tú tinn? Táim.	Are you sick? Yes, or I am.
Raiḃ sé annsoin? Ní raiḃ.	Was he there? No.
An bfaca tú Seaġán? Ní ḟaca or ní ḟacas.	Did you see John? No.
An bfaca sé an teaċ? Ċonnaic.	Did he see the house? He did.
An dtuigeann tú? Tuigim.	Do you understand? Yes.
An dtiocfaiḋ tú? Ní ṫiocfad.	Will you come? No, I will not.

(*b*) When the question has been asked with any part of the verb is, expressed or understood, followed by a **definite** noun, the English subject must be used in the answer, as also must the verb, except when the answer is negative.

An tú an fear? Ní mise.	Are you the man? No.
Naċ é sin an fear? Is é.	Is not he the man? Yes, he is.
Ar b'é sin Seaġán? Níor b'é.	Was that John? No, it was not.

Notice also the following:—

FIRST SPEAKER.	SECOND SPEAKER.
Is mise an teaċtaire.	An tú?
I am the messenger.	*Are you?*
Ní h-é sin ár sagart.	Naċ é?
He is not our priest.	*Isn't he?*
Is é an fear é.	Ní h-é.
It is the man.	It is not.

(*c*) Whenever the question is asked by any part of the verb is, followed by an **indefinite** predicate, the word "Yes" is usually translated by repeating the verb and the indefinite predicate, as—

Naċ fuar an lá é? Is fuar.	Isn't it a cold day? Yes, or It is.
Naċ maiṫ é? Is maiṫ.	Is it not good? Yes, or It is.
An aige atá an t-airgead? Is aige.	Is it he who has the money? Yes.

But in this case the answer may also be correctly given by using the neuter pronoun eaḋ. Is eaḋ (or 'seaḋ) for "yes;" ní h-eaḋ for "no."

An madaḋ é sin? Ní h-eaḋ.	Is that a dog? No.
An Sasanaċ é? 'Seaḋ.	Is he an Englishman? Yes.
Naċ maiṫ é? 'Seaḋ.	Isn't it good? It is.

(*d*) When the question is asked with "who" or "what," the subject alone is used in the answer, and if the subject be a personal pronoun the emphatic form will be used, as—

Cia ḋinne é ſin? Miſe.	Who did that? I did.

CHAPTER VI.

The Preposition.

602. As a general rule **the simple prepositions govern a dative case,** and precede the words which they govern: as,

Ṫáinig ſé ó Ċorcaig.	He came from Cork.
Ṫug ſé an t-ubaḃll do'n ṁnaoi.	He gave the apple to the woman.

Exceptions. (1) The preposition idir, "*between,*" governs the accusative case: as, idir Corcaċ agus Luimneaċ, between Cork and Limerick.

(2) Go dtí,* meaning "*to*" (*motion*), is followed by the nominative case.

Ċuaiḋ ſé go dtí an teaċ.	He went to the house.

*Go dtí is really a corrupted form of the old subjunctive mood of the verb tigim, I come; so that the noun after go dtí was *formerly nominative* case to the verb

(3) The preposition gan, "*without,*" governs the dative in the singular, but the accusative in the plural: as,

Tá sé gan céill.	He is without sense.
Gan ár gcáirde.	Without our friends.

603. The words timċeall (*around*),* trasna or treasna (*across*), cois (*beside*), fad (*along*), ċum† (*towards*), together with the archaic words dála and iomṫúsa (*as to*, or *concerning*), although really nouns, are used where prepositions are used in English. Being nouns, **they are followed by the genitive case.**

Buail sé fad na sróine é.	He struck him along the nose.
An mbéiḋ tú ag dul ċum an aonaig i mbárac?	Will you be going to (towards) the fair to-morrow?
Do riṫ sé timċeall na h-áite seo.	He ran around this place.
Do ċuadar trasna an ġuirt eorna.	They went across the field of barley.

For the so-called compound prepositions see par. 608, &c.

604. The following prepositions—i, in (or ann), *in*; go, *to*; le, *with*; and tré, *through*—take s when they

* The meanings given in parenthesis are the usual English equivalents, *not the real meaning of the words.*

† The m in this word is pronounced like n.

come before the article: as, leir an bfear, with the man; inr an leabar, in the book; gur an mbaile, to (the) town; leir na buaċaillib, with (or by) the boys.

605. The simple prepositions cause aspiration when the article is not used with them: as, Ar bárr an ċnuic. On the top of the hill. Fuair ré ó ḟear an tiġe é. He got it from the man of the house.

Exceptions (1) The prepositions ag, *at*; le, *with*; ar, *out*: go, *to*, cause neither aspiration nor eclipsis; as, Do ṫuit ré le Goll. He fell by Goll. Ċuaiḋ ré go Baile-Áṫa-Cliaṫ. He went to Dublin.

Gan, *without*, may aspirate or not.

(2) The preposition i or a, in, causes eclipsis even without the article: as, Bí ré i gCorcaiġ. He was in Cork.

606. The simple prepositions, when followed by the article and a noun in the singular number, usually cause eclipsis: as, ar an mbárr, on the top; ó 'n bfear, from the man; 'ran mbaile, at home.

Exceptions. (1) The prepositions do,* to, and de, of, off, from, when followed by the article, usually cause aspiration, though in some places eclipsis takes place.

---

*Go or go dtí is usually used for "to" when *motion to* is implied (the Latin acc. of motion). do is usually used for "to" when *no motion* is implied (the Latin *dative*).

Aspiration is the more common practice: do 'n ḟear, to the man; de'n ṁnaoi, from the woman. They prefix t to s; as, Ṫug sé do'n tsagart é. He gave it to the priest.

(2) When gan, *without*, is followed by the article it produces no change in the initial consonant following: as, gan an fíon, without the wine; but if the following noun be masculine and begin with a vowel, or be feminine beginning with s, t is prefixed: as, gan an t-eun, without the bird; gan an tsúil, without the eye.

In the Northern dialect aspiration takes place after the preposition and the article.

607. When a simple preposition ending in a vowel comes before the possessive adjective a (*his, her,* or *their*), or the possessive ár, *our*, and bur, *your*, the letter n is inserted before the possessive: as, le n-a láiṁ, by his hand; tré n-a mbosaiḃ, through their palms; le n-ár gcuid, with (or by) our portion; le nbur dtoil, with your permission.

Except the prepositions do and de, which become d'.

Whenever go or le comes before any other word beginning with a vowel the letter h is usually inserted: as, ó ṁaidin go h-oiḋċe, from morning till night; go h-Albain, to Scotland; le h-eagla, with fear. (See par. 29.)

608. In Irish certain nouns preceded by prepositions have often the force of English prepositions. **As nouns they are, of course, followed by a genitive case, unless a preposition comes between them and the following noun, when the dative case naturally follows.** Such locutions are styled in most grammars "Compound Prepositions," and to account for their construction they give the rule "*Compound Prepositions are followed by the genitive case.*"

609. We give here a fairly full list of such phrases employed in Modern Irish.

i bfarraḋ,	along with; on the side of.
i bfiaḋnuise, i láṫair, os cóṁair,	in the presence of.
os coinne,	before; face to face.
ar uċt, ar son,	for the sake of, for the love of
ar sgáṫ,	under the pretext of.
i bfoċair,	along with, in company with.
i dtaoḃ,	concerning; with regard to.
i gceann,	at the end of.
fá ḋéin, i gcoinne, (ar ċeann),	for (in the sense of going *for*).
i measg,	among, amongst.

ar aġaiḋ,	opposite.
i n-aġaiḋ,	against.
ar feaḋ,	through, throughout (used of time).
ar fud,	through, throughout (used of space).
ar gcúl,	behind, at the back of.
i ndiaiḋ,	after (used of *place*).
tar éis, d'éis,	after (used of time).
i gcúrsaiḋe,	concerning, about.
do ċum, (ċum),	to, towards.
d' ionnsaiḋe, d' ionnsaiġiḋ,	towards.
le cois, cois,	beside, by the side of (a sea, a river, &c.)
i n-eudan,	against.
do réir,	according to.
os cionn,	over, above.
tar ċeann,	besides, beyond, in preference to.
le h-ais,	beside, by the side of.
i gcaiṫeaṁ, i riṫ,	during.
i n-aiṁḋeoin,	in spite of.
le h-aġaiḋ,	for, for the use of.
i n-aice,	near.

610. Some of them are followed by Prepositions

láiṁ le,	near, beside.
i n-gar do,	near.
timċeall ar,	around (*and touching*).
mar ġeall ar,	on account of.
mar aon le,	along with, together with:
i n-éinfeaċt le, } i n-aon-ḋiġe le, }	together with, at the same time as.

611. Examples—(1) Nouns.

Do ċuir sé os cionn an dorais é.	He put it over the door.
Ċonnac i n-aice an tobair iad	I saw them near the well.
Do riṫ an gaḋar i ndiaiḋ an tsionnaiġ.	The hound ran after the fox.
Cia ḃí i ḃfoċair Séumais?	Who was along with James?
Do ṫug sé ḋom an capall so le h-agaid an tsagairt.	He gave me this horse for the priest.
Tiocfad ar ais d' éis an tsaṁraiḋ.	I shall come back after the summer.
Ní ḟuil leiġeas ar biṫ i n-agaiḋ an ḃáis.	There is no remedy against death.
Do ċuaiḋ sé fá ḋéin na gcapall.	He went for the horses.
Ar feaḋ an lae.	Throughout the day.
Ar fud na tíre.	Throughout the country.

Do réir an leaḃair seo.	According to this bcok.
Tá sé le cois na fairrge.	He is beside the sea.
Do ċuir sé an lúb timċeall ar mo ċeann.	He put the loop around my head.

612. (2) **Pronouns.**

Ṫáinig sé im ḋiaiḋ.	He came after me.
Ná téiġ 'na ndiaiḋ seo.	Do not go after these.
Cia ḃí 'na ḟoċair?	Who was along with him?
Deunfad é sin ar do ṡon.	I shall do that for your sake.
Ar ċeannuiġis é seo lem aġaiḋ?	Did you buy this one for me?
Ḃíos ar a n-aġaiḋ.	I was opposite them.
Tá an fuiseóg os ár gcionn.	The lark is above us.
An raiḃ tú i n-ár n-aice (i n-aice linn)?	Were you near us?
Ḃí sé i n-aice liom.	He was near me.
Ṫáinig siad im aġaiḋ.	They came against me.

Translation of the Preposition "For."

613. (*a*) When "*for*" means "to bring," "to fetch," use fá ḋéin, a g-coinne, or ar ċeann, followed by a genitive case; or ag triall ar: as,

Go for the horse.	Téiġ ag triall ar an gcapall.
He went for John.	Ċuaiḋ sé fá ḋéin Seaġáin.

(*b*) When "*for*" means "to oblige," "to please," use do, followed by the dative case: as,

Do that for him.	Deun sin dó.
Here is your book for you.	'Seo ḋuit do leaḃar.

Use do to translate "for" in the phrases "good for," "bad for," "better for," &c.: as,

This is bad for you.	Is olc ḋuit é seo.

(*c*) When "*for*" means "for the use of," use le h-aġaiḋ, followed by a genitive case, or do with dative.

I bought this for the priest.	Ċeannuiġeas é seo le h-aġaiḋ an tsagairt (do'n tsagairt).
He gave me money for you.	Ṫug sé airgead dom led' aġaiḋ.

(*d*) When "*for*" means "duration of time" use le, with the dative case, if the time be *past*, but ar feaḋ or go ceann. with the genitive case, if the time be *future*. In either case past and future are to be understood, not with regard to present time, but to the time of the action described.

(1) He had been there for a year when I came.	Ḃí sé ann le bliaḋain nuair ṫáinig mé.
(2) He stayed there for a year.	D' ḟan sé ann ar feaḋ (go ceann) bliaḋna

In the first sentence the year is supposed to be completed at the time we are speaking about, and is, therefore, past with regard to the time we are describing.

In the second sentence the time at which the action of staying (if we be allowed to use the word "action") took place at the very beginning of the year that he spent there. The year itself came after the time we are describing; therefore it is future with regard to that time

It will be a great assistance to the student to remember that ar feað or go ceann are used when in the English sentence the fact is merely stated, as in sentence (2); and that le is used when a secondary tense ought to be used in the English sentence, as in sentence (1).

(*e*) When "*for*" means "for the sake of," use ar son followed by a genitive case.

He toiled for a little gold. Saoṫruiġ sé ar son beag-áin óir.

(*f*) When "*for*" is used in connection with "buying" or "selling," use ar followed by a dative case.

He bought it for a pound. Ċeannuiġ sé ar púnt é.

I sold it for a shilling. Ḋíolas ar sgilling é.

(*g*) "*For*" after the English verb "ask" is not translated in Irish.

He asked me for a book. D' iarr sé leaḃar orm.

Ask that man for it. Iarr ar an ḃfear soin é.

(*h*) "*For*" after the word "desire" (dúil) is usually translated by i (=in): as, Desire for gold, dúil i n-ór or, dúil ins an ór.

(*i*) The English phrase "*only for*" very often means "were it not for," "had it not been for," and is translated by muna mbiaḋ, followed by a nominative.

Only for John the horse would be dead now.	Muna mbiaḋ Seaġán do ḃiaḋ an capall marḃ anois.

614. Note the following Examples.

I have a question *for you*.	Tá ceist agam ort.
To play *for* (a wager).	Imirt ar (ġeall).
To send *for*.	Cur fios . . . . ar.
A cure *for* sickness.	Leiġeas i n-aġaiḋ tinnis. ,, ar ṫinneas.
To wait *for*.	Fanaṁaint le.
For your life, don't tell.	Ar d' anam, ná h-innis.
He faced *for* the river.	Ṫug sé a aġaiḋ ar an abainn.
They fought *for* (*about*) the Fiannship.	Ṫroideadar um an bḟiannuiġeaċt.
Don't blame him *for* it.	Ná cuir a ṁilleán air (its blame on him).
I have great respect *for you*.	Tá meas mór agam ort.
This coat is too big *for me*.	Tá an cóta ro ró-ṁór dom.
What shall we have *for* dinner?	Caidé ḃias againn ar ár ndinneur?
It is as good for you to do your best.	Tá sé coṁ maiṫ agat do ḋiċeall do ḋeunaṁ.

615. Translation of the Preposition "Of."

(*a*) Whenever "*of*" is equivalent to the English possessive case, translate it by the genitive case in Irish.

The son of the man.	Mac an ḟir.
The house of the priest.	Teaċ an tsagairt.

There are cases in which the English "of," although not equivalent to the possessive case, is translated by the genitive in Irish.

The man of the house.	Fear an tiġe.
A stone of meal.	Cloċ ṁine.

(*b*) Whenever "*of*" describes the material of which a thing is composed, or the contents of a body, use the genitive case.

A ring of iron.	Fáinne iarainn.
A cup of milk.	Cupán bainne.
A glass of water.	Gloine uisge.

(*c*) When "*of*" comes after a numeral, or a noun expressing a part of a whole, use de with the dative; but if the word after "*of*" in English be a *personal pronoun*, use one of the compounds of ag with the personal pronouns.

The first day of the week.	An ċeud lá de'n tseaċtṁain.
One of our hounds.	Ceann d' ár ngaḋraiḃ.
Many of the nobles.	Mórán de na h-uaisliḃ.
One of us was there.	Ḃí duine againn ann.

Some of them.	Cuid aca.
One of these (persons).	Duine aca so.

A leaṫ is used for "*half of it*" or "*half of them.*"

(*d*) When "*of*" follows "*which,*" use de with nouns, and ag with pronouns.

Which of the men?	Cia (ciaca) de na fearaiḃ?
Which of us?	Cia againn?

(*e*) When "*of*" means "*about*" use timċioll or fá.

They were talking of the matter.	Ḃíodar ag caint timċioll an ruda.

(*f*) "*Of*" after the English verb "ask," "inquire,' is translated by de.

Ask that of John.	Fiafruiġ sin de Ṡeaġán.

(*g*) When "*of*" expresses "*the means*" or *instrument*" use le or de.

He died of old age.	Fuair sé bás le sean-aois.
He died of hunger.	Fuair sé bás leis an ocras.
He died of a seven days' sickness.	Fuair sé bás de ġalar seaċt lá.

(*h*)	Both of us.	Sinn araon.
	Both of you.	Siḃ araon.
	Both of them.	Siad araon, iad araon.

616. Further Examples.

He is ignorant *of* Irish.	Tá sé ainḃfiosaċ ins an nGaeḋilig.
The like of him.	A leiṫéid (his like).
Such a thing as this.	A leiṫéid seo de ruḋ.
Don't be afraid *of me*.	Ná bíoḋ eagla orṫ róṁam.
A friend *of mine*.	Cara ḋom.
A friend of yours.	Cara ḋuit.
A horse *of mine*.	Capall liom.
A horse of Brian's.	Capall le Brian.
I have no doubt *of it*.	Ní ḟuil aṁras agam air.
A man of great strength.	Fear is mór neart.
Oisin of mighty strength and vigour.	Oisín ba ṫreun neart a's luṫ.

(Ba is the past tense of is in the previous sentence.)

I think much of it.	Tá meas mór agam air.

CHAPTER VII.

Classification of the Uses of the Prepositions.

617. Ag, AT.

1. **To denote possession** (*a*) with tá.

Tá sgian agam.	I have a knife.
Tá aiṫne agam ar an ḃfear soin.	I know that man.

(*b*) With other verbs:

Ċoimeád sé an sgian aige féin.	He kept the knife for himself.
D' ḟág sé aca iad	He left them to them.

2. It is used in a **partitive sense,** of them, &c.

Aon duine aca.	Anyone of them.
Gaċ aon aca.	Each one of them.

3. With verbal nouns to translate the English present participle:

(*a*) active — Tá sé ag bualaḋ an ḃuaċalla.
He is beating the boy.

(*b*) passive—Tá an buaċaill agá ('ġá) ḃualaḋ.
The boy is being beaten.

4. **With verbal nouns followed by** do, meaning "**while.**"

Ag dul dóiḃ.	While they were going.

5. To express the **agent** or **cause** with passive verbs.

Tá an ċloc ġá(agá) tógáil ag Séamus.	The stone is being raised by James.

N.B.—Ag does *not* aspirate; but when used with the article it eclipses.

618. AR, ON, UPON.

1. Literal use: ar an mbord, on the table.
2. In **adverbial phrases:**

(a) TIME.

ar ball, just now, by and by.
lá ar lá, day by day.
ar uairibh, by times.
ar feadh, **during.**
ar maidin, in the **morning.**
ar an láthair, **immediately.**

(b) PLACE.

ar bith, in existence, at all.
ar lear, / ar fairrge, / ar muir, } at sea.
ar lár, on the ground.
ar tí, on the point of.
ar fad, in length.
ar faid,* lengthwise.
ar chúl, behind.
ar sgoil, in school.
ar fud, throughout,
ar neamh, in heaven.
ar bord, on board.
ar talamh, / ar talmhain, } on earth.
ar an doras, by (through) the door.

trí troighthe { ar fad (faid), three **feet long.** / ar leithead, ,, **wide.** / ar airde, ,, high. / ar doimhne, ,, **deep.** }

(c) CAUSE.

ar an ádhbhar sin, for that reason, therefore.
ar son, for the sake of.
ar eagla go, for fear that.
ar leathtrom, **under oppression.**
ar toil, according to the will of.

---

* ar a faid, literally *on its length.*

ar éigin, hardly, by compulsion.

ar toġa, at the choice of.

(*d*) MANNER AND CONDITION.

ar ċor ar biṫ, on any condition.
ar an móḋ, in the manner.
ar aġaiḋ, forward.
aġaiḋ ar aġaiḋ, face to face.
leaṫ ar leaṫ, side by side.
ar lasaḋ, ablaze.
ar ċumas, in the power of.
beagán ar ḃeagán, little by little.
ar cáirde, on credit.

ar ḋeilḃ, in the form of.
ar siuḃal, in progress.
ar a laiġead, at least.
ar ais, back.
ar gcúl, backwards.
ar trasna, breadthwise.
ar fán, } astray.
ar seaċrán, } astray.
ar meisge, drunk.
ar sodar, trotting.
ar iasaċt, on loan.

3. **In numbers:**

Trí ar ḟiċid, 23.

Tríoṁaḋ ar ḟiċid, 23rd.

4. (*a*) **Before the verbal noun,** which it eclipses or aspirates to form the past participle active.

Ar ḋúnaḋ an doruis dóiḃ d' imṫiġeadar. Having shut the door, they went away.

(*b*) With the possessive adjective a and verbal noun to form perfect participle passive.

Ar n-a ċur i n-eagar ag, Edited by.

Ar n-a ċur amaċ ag Connraḋ na Gaeḋilge, Published by the Gaelic League.

5. **Emotions** felt by a person:

Care, sorrow, &c.	Tá imniḋe, brón orm.
Thirst, hunger, need, sickness.	Tá tart, ocras, easbaiḋ, tinneas orm.
Fear.	Tá eagla, faitċios orm.
Joy, love, affection.	Tá lúṫġáir, gráḋ orm.

6. **In phrases:**

Tioḋlacaḋ ar, favour (conferred) *on*.

Gráḋ, gean ar, affection *for*.

Eolas, fios, aiṫne ar, knowledge *of*, acquaintance *with*.

Gráin ar, horror of, or disgust with.

Tá amras orm, I doubt, I suspect.

Cuṁaċt ar, power over.

Buaiḋ ar, victory over.

Onóir ar, honour (given) to.

Tá baoġal ar, there is danger.

Cuiṁne ar, remembrance *of*.

Casaoid ar, Gearán ar, } complaint against.

Fuaṫ ar, hatred of.

Fiaċ ar, debt *due from*.

Cumas ar, power *over*, capacity *for*.

Fiaċa ar, claim upon.

De ċeangal ar, D' fiaċaiḃ ar, D' ualaċ ar, } of obligation *on*.

In the above phrases the agent is expressed by ag where possible, tá gráḋ, gean, eolas, cuiṁne, &c., agam ort.

7. AR is used after various classes of **verbs**.

(*a*) Verbs of **motion upon or against** (*striking, inflicting*, &c.).

Imrim pian ar.	I punish.
Teilgim ar (le).	I throw at.
Casaḋ ar. / Ċárla ar.	Met.
Casaḋ an fear orm.	I met the man.
Do ġaḃ sé de ċloċaiḃ orta.	He threw stones at them.

(*b*) **After the verb** Ḃeirim.

Ḃeirim ar.	I call (name), (ar before person), induce, persuade, compel a person (to do something).
Ḃeirim iarraċt ar.	I attempt (something or to do something).
Ḃeirim díol ar.	I requite, repay (a person).
Ḃeirim* fá n-deara ar,	I cause, make (a person do something).
Ḃeirim gráḋ ar.	I love (fall in love with), &c.
Ḃeirim míniuġaḋ ar.	I explain.

(*c*) **After the verb** Beirim.

Beirim ar . . . . . ar.	I catch, seize (a person) by (the hand, &c.).
Beirim ar.	I overtake, I catch.
Beirim breiṫeaṁnas ar,	I judge, pass judgment on.
Beirim buaiḋ ar.	I conquer.

* Cuirim may be used in this sense.

(*d*) **After verbs of Praying, Beseeching, Appealing to.**

Iaṙraim ar.	I ask, entreat (a person).
Guiḋim ar.	I pray *for* (sometimes I pray *to*); but generally guiḋim ċum Dé ar ṡon &c. I pray to God for.
Impiġim ar.	I beseech.

(*e*) **After verbs of Speaking about, Thinking of, Treating of, Writing of, &c.**

Laḃraim ar, I speak of.	Smuainim ar, I think of.
Tráċtaim ar, I treat of.	Sgrioḃaim ar, I write of, or about.
Cuiṁniġim ar, I remember.	

(*f*) Verbs of **looking at:**

Feuċaim ar or ḋearcaim ar. I look at.

(*g*) Verbs of **threatening, complaining, offending, displeasing, &c.**

Bagraim ar.	I threaten.
Goillim ar.	I am troublesome to.
Ġeiḃim loċt ar.	I find fault with.

(*h*) Verbs of **concealing, neglecting, hindering, forbidding, refusing, &c.**

Ceilim ar.	I conceal from.
Toirmeasgaim ar.	I hinder or forbid.
Failliġim ar.	I neglect.

(*i*) Verbs of **protecting, guarding, guaranteeing against.**

Seaċain tú féin ar an dtrucaill sin.	Take care of yourself from that car.
Seaċain do láṁ ar an gcloiċ sin.	Take care! That stone will hurt your hand.

8. (*a*) Cuirim is used with verbal nouns and adverbial phrases beginning with ar:

Cuirim ar criṫ.	I put in a tremble.
Cuirim ar coimeád.	I put on one's guard.
Cuirim ar seaċrán.	I set astray.
Cuirim ar cáirde.	I put off, delay, postpone.
Cuirim ar gcúl.	I put aside.
Cuirim ar neiṁniḋ.	I reduce to nothing, I annihilate.

(*b*) Also with many nouns :—

Cuirim ceist ar.	I question.
Cuirim comaoin ar.	I do a kindness to.
Cuirim / Caiṫim } crainn ar (ṫar).	I cast lots for.
Cuirim cuma ar.	I arrange.
Cuirim gairm (fios) ar.	I send for.
Cuirim láṁ ar.	I set about.
Cuirim leigeas ar.	I apply a remedy to.
Cuirim luiḋeaċan ar.	I lay a snare for.
Cuirim moill ar.	I delay.
Cuirim toirmeasg ar.	I hinder.
Cuirim impiḋe ar.	I beseech.

9. Ġním is used with many nouns meaning "I inflict...on."

Ġním bagar ar.	I threaten.
Ġním buaiḋreaḋ ar.	I trouble.
Ġním casaoid ar.	I complain of.
Ġním eugcóir ar.	I wrong.
Ġním feall ar.	I act treacherously towards.
Ġním smaċt ar.	I exercise authority over, I restrain.
Ġním breiṫeaṁnas ar.	I judge, pass judgment upon.
Ġním faire ar.	I watch.

619. AS, OUT OF, FROM.

1. **Literal use:** out of, from, &c.

Ċuaiḋ sé as an tiġ.	He went out of the house.
Dul as an mbeaṫaiḋ.	To depart from life.

2. With various other verbs:

Dúisiġim as codlaḋ.	I arouse from sleep.
Cuirim as seilḃ.	I dispossess.
Croċaim as.	I hang from.
Cuirim asam.	I utter (a shriek, &c.).
Léiġim as.	I let off.
Sgriosaim as.	I erase from.
Tuitim as a ċéile.	To fall asunder.
Tarraing as a ċéile.	To pull asunder.

3. To express **origin, cause; ground of proof; confidence, trust in:**

Ar gaċ áird.	From every quarter.
Soċar do ḃaint ar.	Derive benefit from.
An fáṫ ar.	The reason why.
Ar so suas.	Henceforth.
Is follus ar.	It is evident from.
Iontuigṫe ar.	Inferable from.
Muiniġin ar.	Confidence in.

4. After verbs, of **boasting** or **taking pride in:**

Maoiḋim ar.	I boast of.
Glórṁar ar.	Glorying in.
Lánṁar ar féin.	Full of himself.

620. Ċum (ċun), TOWARDS.

1. Ċum is used after **verbs of motion:**

Ċuaiḋ sé ċum an tiġe.	He went towards the house.
Cur ċum fairrge.	To put to sea.

2. Before **verbal noun to express purpose:**

Ṫáinig sé ċum an ċapaill do ḋíol.	He came to sell the horse.

3. In Phrases, as:

Tabairt ċum críċe.	To bring to pass.
Gaḃaim ċugam.	I take for myself.
Cur ċum báis.	To put to death.
Léig ċum báis.	Let die.
Gleusta ċum oibre.	Prepared for work.
Ċum go.	In order that.
Guiḋim ċum.	I pray to.
Dul ċum dliġeaḋ.	To go to law.

621. DE, FROM, OUT OF.

1. **Literal use:**

Bainim de.	I take from.
Éiriġim de.	I arise from.
Tuitim de.	I fall from.
Sgaoilim de.	I loose from (anything).

2. **Partitive use:**

Drong de na daoiniḃ.	Some of the people.
Duine de na fearaiḃ.	One of the men.
Fear de ṁuintir Ṁaċġaṁna.	One of the O'Mahoney's.

Often before the relative it is equivalent **to a superlative relative:**

Ḃeurfad gaċ níḋ d'á ḃfuil agam.	I will give everything I have.

Is é an fear is aoirde d' á ḃfacas riaṁ.	He is the tallest man I ever saw.
Ní maiṫ leis níḋ d' á dtugais dó.	He does not like anything you gave him.

3. **In the following phrases:**

de ḃriġ, because
d' eagla go, lest
d' aois, of age
de ṡíor, perpetually
de ḋruim, owing to
d' éis, after
de ḋeoin, willingly
de ṡúil le, in expectation of
d' áiriṫe, for certain
de ġnáṫ, usually
de ġníoṁ, in effect
de m' iúl, to my knowledge
de ḋíṫ, } for lack of,
d' easbaiḋ, } want of
d' aiṁḋeoin, unwillingly, in spite of
de ṫaoiḃ, concerning

4. **After following verbs, &c.:**

Fiafruiġim de.	I ask (enquire) of.
Leanaim de.	I adhere to.
Líonta de (le).	Filled with.
Lán de.	Full of.
Ġním tagairt de.	I mention.
Ġním úsáid de.	I make use of.
Ġním ... de	I make ... out of (from) ...
Léigim díom	I let slip.

5. To translate "**with,**" &c., in phrases like de léim, with a leap, at a bound.

622. DO, TO, FOR.

1. Literal use:

(*a*) **After adjectives** (generally with is):

cinnte do,	certain for (a person).
cóir do,	right for (a person).
éigean do	necessary for.
maith do,	good for.
fearr do,	better for.

(*b*) **After nouns:**

(dul) i sochar do,	for the advantage of.
(is) beatha dó,	(is) his life.
(is) athair dó,	(is) his father.

(*c*) **After verbs:**

Aithnim do, I command.

Bronnaim do (ar) I present to.

Deónuighim do, I vouchsafe to.

Fógraim do, I announce to.

Freagraim do, I answer.

Géillim do, I obey or do homage to.

Órduighim do, I order.

Gabhaim do chosaibh, I trample.

Cinnim do, I appoint for.

Comhairlighim do, I advise.

Diúltaim do, I renounce.

Fóghnaim do, I am of use to.

Geallaim do, I promise.

Léigim do, I allow, let.

Innsim do, I tell.

Taisbeánaim do, Teasbánaim do, I show.

Coiglim do, I spare.

2. **To express the agent:**

After the verbal noun, preceded by ar, ag, &c.:

Ar dteaċt annso dóiḃ.	On their arrival here.

With the **participle of necessity, participles in** ion, &c.:

Ní molta duit é.	He must not be praised by you.
Is é sin is indéanta duit.	That's what you must do.

3. For its use in connection with the verbal noun see pars. 563, 568, 570.

623.

fá or fé, UNDER, ABOUT, CONCERNING.

1. Literal use: as,

Tá sé fá 'n mbord.	It is under the table.

2. fá is used in forming the **multiplicatives:**

fá dó, twice: **fá ṫrí, thrice, &c.**

3. **In adverbial phrases:**

fá ċoṁair, (keeping) for.
fá leiṫ, separately.
fá deo, at last.
fá deireaḋ, at last.
fá ṡeaċ, individually, **separately.**
fá mar. **just so (as).**

624. ᵹan, WITHOUT.

1. Literal use:

ᵹan pinᵹinn im ṗóca.	Without a penny in my pocket.

2. To express *not* before the **verbal noun:**

Abair leis ᵹan teaċt.	Tell him not to come.

625. ᵹo, WITH.

1. This preposition used only in a few phrases: generally before leiṫ, *a half.*

Míle ᵹo leiṫ.	A mile and a half.
Slat ᵹo leiṫ.	A yard and a half.

2. In forming adverbs:

ᵹo maiṫ, well. ᵹo breáᵹ, finely.

626. ᵹo, TO, TOWARDS.

1. Literal use: motion, as—

ᵹo Luimneaċ.	To or towards Limerick.

2. In Phrases:

Ó uair ᵹo h-uair.	From hour to hour.
Ó nóin ᵹo ċéile.	From evening to evening.
Ó ṁaidin ᵹo h-oiḋċe.	From morning till night.

627. i (in, ann), IN, INTO (*Eclipsing*).

1. Of **time :**

Ins an tSaṁraḋ.	In Summer.

2. Of **motion to a place :**

Iar dteaċt i n-Éirinn do Ṗádraig.	Patrick having come into Ireland.

3. Of **rest at a place :**

Tá sé i nDoire.	He is in Derry.

4. In **following phrases :**

i n-aoinḟeaċt le, along with.	i n-agaiḋ, against.
i ndiaiḋ, after.	i gceann, at end of.
i gcoinne, against.	i gcoṁair, in front of.
i bḟoċair, in company with.	i measg, among.
i dtimċioll, about.	

5. After words expressing **esteem, respect, liking, &c.,** for something :

Dúil i n-ór.	Desire for gold.

6. **Used predicatively after** Tá :

Táim im' ḟear láidir anois.	I am a strong man now.
Tá siad 'na mbádaiḃ maiṫe.	They are good boats.

7. In existence, extant :

Is breáġ an aimsir atá ann.	It's fine weather we're having

Ní cóir ḋuit dul amaċ ⁊ an aimsir ḟuar atá ann anois.

You ought not to go out *considering* the cold weather we have now.

8. Used after tá to express "to be able."

Ní ḃíonn ann féin iompóḋ. He cannot turn.

9. After cuir, beir, dul, in phrases like:

Cuirim i gcuiṁne do.	I remind.
Dul i soċar do.	To benefit.

628. IDIR, BETWEEN, AMONG.

1. Literal use:

nós idir na Roṁánċaiḃ,	a custom among the Romans.
deiċfir eatorra,	difference between them.

2. IDIR...AGUS, BOTH...AND.

idir boċt agus saiḃḃir,	both rich and poor.
idir aṫair agus ṁac,	both father and son.
idir ċaorċaiḃ agus uanaiḃ,	both sheep and lambs.
idir fearaiḃ is ṁnáiḃ,	both men and women.

629. LE, WITH.

1. Literal use, with:

leis an maor,	with the steward.

2. **With** is **to denote possession:**

Is liomsa é.	It is my own. It belongs to me.
Cia leis iad?	Who owns them?

3. With is and adjectives to denote "*in the opinion of*:"

Is fiú liom é.	I think it worth my while.
Do b' ḟada leis.	He thought it long.

4. **To denote instrument** or **means:**

Briseaḋ an fuinneóg le cloiċ.	The window was broken by a stone.
Fuair sé bás leis an ocras.	He died of hunger.
Loisgeaḋ le teiniḋ é.	He was burned with fire.

5. After verbs or expressions of **motion:**

Amaċ leis,	Out (he went).
Siar liḃ!	Stand back!
D' imṫiġ sí léiṫi,	She departed.

6. With verbs of **touching; behaviour towards; saying to; listening to; selling to; paying to; waiting for:**

Éist liom,	Listen to me.
Bainim le,	I touch.
Laḃraim le,	I speak to.
Díolas an bó leis,	I sold the cow to him.
Ná fan liom,	Do not wait for me.

7. After words expressing **comparison with, likeness to, severance from, union with, peace with, war with, expectation of.**

Tá ré ċoṁ áṙḋ liom.	**He is as tall as I.**
Tá ré coṙṁail leat.	**He is like you.**
Do ṙgaṙ ré leo.	**He separated from them.**

8. **With verbal noun to express purpose, intention** (see pars. 567, 569).

9. In following phrases :—

le h-aġaiḋ, for (use of),	le coiṙ, **near, beside.**
le h-uċt, with a view to.	láiṁ le, **near.**
le h-aiṙ, back.	maṙ aon le, **along with.**
le ḟánaiḋ, downward.	taoḃ le, **beside.**

630. maṙ, LIKE TO, AS.

1. Literal use : *as, like to.*

maṙ ṙin, thus	aġuṙ maṙ ṙin ḋe, **and so on.**
Do ġlac ré maṙ ċéile í.	**He took her for a spouse.**
ḟá maṙ aḋuḃaiṙt ré,	(according) **as he said.**

2. Before relative particle a, it is **equivalent to *as*,** *how, where,* &c.

an áit maṙ a ṙaiḃ ré, the place where **he was.**

3. For an idiomatic use of maṙ, see par. **353.**

631. Ó, FROM, SINCE.

1. **Since** (of time): as,

 ó ṫúr, from the beginning. ó ṡoin, ago.

 Conjunction: as,

 Ó naċ ḃfaca ruḋ ar biṫ, ṫánga abaile arír.
 Since I saw nothing I came home again.

2. Of **place, motion from:**

 Ó Éirinn, from Erin.

3. **In a modal sense:**

ód ċroiḋe,	with all thy heart.
boċt ó (i) rpioraid,	poor in spirit.

4. After words expressing **severance from, distance from, going away from, turning from, taking from, exclusion from, cleansing, defending, protecting, healing. alleviating.**

632. ÓS, OVER.

Used only in a few phrases as:

ór cionn, above, over. bun ór cionn, upside down.
ór íreal. silently, secretly. ór árd, loudly.

633. ROIṀ, BEFORE.

1. Of **time**:

Deiċ nóimiḋ roiṁ (ċun) a trí.	Ten minutes to three.
Roiṁe seo.	Before this, heretofore, formerly.
Roiṁe sin.	Previously.

2. **Of fleeing before, from**; coming in front of; lying before one (=awaiting); putting before one (=proposing to oneself):

Cibé ċuireas roiṁe é seo do ḋeunaṁ.	Whoever proposes to do this.
Ḃí an ġirrfiaḋ ag riṫ roiṁ na conaiḃ.	The hare was running from the hounds.

3. After **expressions of fear, dislike, welcome, &c.:**

Ná bíoḋ eagla ort rómpa.	Do not be afraid of them.
Fáilte róṁat (róṁaiḃ)!	Welcome!

634. TAR, BEYOND, OVER, PAST.

1. Of **motion** (place and time):

Léim sé ṫar an mballa.	He leaped over the wall.
An mí seo ġaḃ ṫorainn.	Last month.

2. Figuratively: "in preference to," "beyond."

Ṫar mar ḃí sé deiċ mbliaḋna fiċead ó ṡoin.	Compared with what it was 30 years ago.
Ṫar mar buḋ ḋliġṫeaċ dó.	Beyond what was lawful for him.

3. In following phrases:

dul tar, transgress.

tar éis, after.

Tar ċeann go, notwithstanding.

teaċt ṫar, refer to, treat of

tar ais, back.

Druim tar ais, upside down.

635. TRÉ, (TRÍ), THROUGH, BY MEANS OF.

1. Physically, through:

Tré n-a lámaiḃ.	Through his hands.

2. Figuratively, "owing to":

Tríd sin.	Owing to that.

N.B.—In the spoken language tríd is generally used instead of tré or treas.

636. um, ABOUT, AROUND.

1. **Time:** um ṫráṫnóna, in the evening.

2. **Place:** um an tiġ, around the house.

3. **About:** of putting or having clothing on.

Do ċuireadar umpa a gcuid éadaiġ.	They put on their clothes.

4. **Cause:** uime sin, therefore.

PARSING.

637. A. Parse each word in the following sentence:
Adeir Seumas gur leis féin an capall do ḃi aige
(Prep. Grade, 1900).

Adeir — An irreg. trans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, analytic form of the verb deirim (verbal noun, ráḋ).

Seumas — A proper noun, first declen., genitive Seumais, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., nom. case, being subject of adeir.

gur — A conjunction used before the past tense: compounded of go and ro.

['ḃ] — The dependent form, past tense, of the verb is.

leis — A prepositional pronoun (or a pronominal preposition), 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender. Compounded of le and sé.

féin — An indeclinable word, added to leis for the sake of emphasis.

an — The definite article, nom. sing. masc., qualifying the noun capall.

capall — A com. noun, first declen., genitive capaill, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and nom. case, being the subject of the suppressed verb ['ḃ].

do — A particle used as a sign of the past tense, causing aspiration; but here it has also the force of a relative.

bí — An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood past tense, analytic form of the verb táim (verbal noun, beiṫ).

aige — A prepositional pronoun, 3rd sing., masc. gender, compounded of ag and é.

B. Parse the following sentence: Do ċuir sí fód móna ar dearg-lasaḋ i n-díon tiġe na scoile maidin lae bealtaine. (Junior Grade, 1900).

Do — A particle used as the sign of the past tense, causing aspiration.

ċuir — A reg. trans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, analytic form of the verb cuirim (verbal noun, cur).

sí — A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend., conjunctive form, nominative case, being the subject of the verb ċuir.

fód — A com. noun, first declen., gen. fóid, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, accusative case, being the object of the verb ċuir.

móna A common noun, third declension, nom. móin, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun fód.

ar A preposition, governing the dative case.

dearg-lasaḋ A compound verbal noun, genitive dearg-lasta, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition ar.

i A preposition, governing the dative case, and causing eclipsis.

díon A com. noun, first declens., gen. dín, 3rd pers. sing. masc. gender and dative case, governed by preposition i.

(N.B.—This word may also be second declension).

tiġe An irreg. com. noun, nom. teaċ, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend., genitive case, governed by the noun díon.

na The definite article, genitive sing. feminine, qualifying scoile.

scoile A common noun, second declension, nom. scoil, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun tiġe.

maidin — A com. noun, second declension, gen. maidne, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and dative case, governed by the preposition ar (understood).

Lae-bealtaine — A compound proper noun, nom. lá bealtaine, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun maidin.

C. Parse: Táim ag dul chum an aonaigh (Junior, '98).

Táim — An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, 1st pers. sing., synthetic form, of tá (verbal noun, beith).

ag — A prep., governing the dative case.

dul — A verbal noun, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition ag.

chum — A noun (dative case, governed by do understood) used as a preposition, governing the genitive case.

an — The definite article, gen. sing. masc., qualifying the noun aonaigh.

aonaigh — A common noun, first declen., nom. aonach, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case governed by chum.

D. Parse: Ní cóir ḋuit é do ḃualaḋ.

ní	A negative adverb, causing aspiration, modifying the suppressed verb is.
[is]	The assertive verb, present tense, absolute form.
cóir	A common adjective, positive degree, comparative córa, qualifying the phrase é do ḃualaḋ.
ḋuit	A prep. pronoun, 2nd pers. sing. compound of do and tú.
é	A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., nom. case, disjunctive form, being the subject of the suppressed verb is.
do	A preposition, causing aspiration, and governing the dative case.
ḃualaḋ.	A verbal noun, genitive buailte, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition do.

N.B.—É do ḃualaḋ is the subject of the *sentence.*

E. Parse: Ṫáinig sé le capall a ċeannaċ.

Ṫáinig	An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, 3rd pers. sing. of the verb tigim (verbal noun, teaċt).

ré	A pers. pron, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., conjunctive form, nom. case, being the subject of ṫáinig.
le	A preposition governing the dative case.
capall	A common noun, first declens. gen. capaill, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and dative case governed by le.
a	The softened form of the preposition do, which causes aspiration, and governs the dative case.
ċeannaċ.	A verbal noun, genitive ceannuiġṫe, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition a.

IDIOMS.

Tá...agam, I HAVE.

638. As already stated there is no verb *"to have"* in Irish. Its place is supplied by the verb tá followed by the preposition ag. **The direct object of the verb "to have" in English becomes the subject of the verb tá in Irish:** as, I have a book. Tá leabar agam. The literal translation of the Irish phrase is *"a book is at me."*

This translation appears peculiar at first sight, but it is a mode of expression to be found in other languages. Most students are

familiar with the Latin phrase "*Est mihi pater.*" I have a father (lit. there is a father to me); and the French phrase *Ce livre est à moi.* I own this book (lit. This book is to me).

We give here a few sentences to exemplify the idiom:—

He has the book.	Tá an leabar aige.
I have not it.	Ní ḟuil sé agam.
Have you my pen?	An bḟuil mo ṗeann agat?
The woman had the cow.	Bí an bó ag an mnaoi.
The man had not the horse.	Ní raib an capall ag an bḟear.
Will you have a knife to-morrow?	An mb'ai sgian agat i mbárac?
He would not have the dog.	Ní biaḋ an madra aige.
We used to have ten horses.	Do bíoḋ deiċ gcapaill againn.

is liom, I OWN.

639. As the verb "*have*" is translated by tá and the preposition ag, so in a similar manner the verb "*own*" is translated by the verb is and the preposition le. Not only is the verb "*to own*," but also all expressions conveying the idea of *ownership*, such as: The book belongs to me: the book is mine. &c.; are translated by the same idiom.

I own the book. The book is mine. The book belongs to me.	Is liom an leabar.

The horse was John's. The horse belonged to John. John owned the horse.	ḃa le Seaġán an capall.

Notice the position of the words. In translating the verb "*have*" the verb tá is separated from the preposition ag by the noun or pronoun; but in the case of "own" the verb is and the preposition le come together. (See par. 589, &c.)

I have the book.	Tá an leaḃar agam.
I own the book.	Is liom an leaḃar.

In translating such a phrase as "*I have only two cows*," the noun generally comes after the preposition ag: so that this is an exception to what has been said above.

I have only two cows.	Ní ḟuil agam aċt dá ḃuin.

I KNOW.

550. There is no verb or phrase in Irish which can cover the various shades of meaning of the English verb "*to know.*" First, we have the very commonly used word feadar (or feadair mé), *I know;* but this verb is used only after negative or interrogative particles, and has only a few forms. Again, we have the verb aiṫniġim, *I know;* but this verb can only be used in the sense of *recognising.* Finally we have the three very commonly used phrases, tá eolas agam,

tá aiṫne agam, and tá a ḟios agam, all meaning "*I know;*" but these three expressions have three different meanings which must be carefully distinguished.

Whenever the English verb "*know*" means "*to know by heart,*" or "*to know the character of a person,*" "*to know by study,*" &c., use the phrase tá eolas ag...ar.

Whenever "*know*" means "*to recognise,*" "*to know by appearance,*" "*to know by sight,*" &c., use the phrase tá aiṫne ag...ar.

When "*know*" means "*to know by mere information,*" "*to happen to know,*" as in such a sentence as "*Do you know did John come in yet?*" use the phrase tá a ḟios ag, *e.g.* Ḃfuil a ḟios agat an dtáinig Seagán isteaċ fós?

As a rule young students experience great difficulty in selecting the phrases to be used in a given case. This difficulty arises entirely from not striving to grasp the real meaning of the English verb. For those who have already learned French it may be useful to state that as a general rule tá eolas agam corresponds to *je sais* and tá aiṫne agam to *je connais*

Tá aiṫne agam air aċt ní ḟuil eolas agam air. *Je le connais mais je ne le sais pas.* I know him by sight but I do not know his character. "*Do you know*

that man going down the road?" Here the verb "*know*" simply means recognise, therefore the Irish is: ḃfuil aiṫne agat ar an ḃfear ſoin atá ag dul ſíoſ an bóṫar? If you say to a fellow-student "*Do you know your lessons to-day?*" You mean "Do you know them by rote?" or "Have you studied them?" Hence the Irish would be: "Ḃfuil eolaſ agat ar do ċeaċtannaiḃ inḋiu?"

Do you know did the landlord get the rent?
Ḃfuil a ḟioſ agat an ḃfuair an tiġearna talṁan an cíoſ?

I LIKE, I PREFER.

641. "*I like*" and "*I prefer*" are translated by the expressions Iſ maiṫ (áil, ait) liom and Iſ fearr liom (it is good with me; and, it is better with me).

I like milk.	Iſ maiṫ liom bainne.
He prefers milk to wine.	Iſ fearr leiſ bainne ná fíon.
Does the man like meat?	An maiṫ leiſ an ḃfear feoil?
Did you like that?	Ar ṁaiṫ leat é ſin?
I liked it.	Ḃa ṁaiṫ liom é.
We did not like the water.	Níor ṁaiṫ linn an t-uiſge.

642. If we change the preposition "le" in the above sentences, for the preposition "do," we get

another idiom. "It is really good for," "It is of benefit to." Is maiṫ dom é. It is good for me; (*whether I like it or not*).

He does not like milk but it is good for him.
Ní maiṫ leis bainne aċt is maiṫ dó é.

N.B.—In these and like idiomatic expressions the preposition "le" conveys the person's own ideas and feelings, whether these are in accordance with fact or not. Is fiú liom dul go h-Albain. I think it is worth my while to go to Scotland (*whether it is really the case or not*). Is mór liom an luaċ soin. I think that a great price. Is suarać liom é sin. I think that trifling (*another person may not*).

The word "think" in such phrases is not translated into Irish.

Is fiú duit dul go h-Albain. It is really worth your while to go to Scotland (*whether you think so or not*).

tig liom, I CAN, I AM ABLE.

643. Although there is a regular verb feudaim, meaning *I can, I am able*, it is not always used. The two other expressions often used to translate the English verb "*I can*," are tig liom and is féidir liom.

The following examples will illustrate the uses of the verbs.

Present Tense.

feudaim, tig liom* or is féidir liom,†	I can, or am able.
feudann tú, tig leat or is féidir leat.	Thou canst or art able.
&c.,	&c.

Negative.

Ní ḟeudaim, ní ṫig liom; or ní féidir liom.	I cannot, I am not able.

Interrogative.

An dtig leat? or an féidir leat?	Can you? or are you able?

Negative Interrogative.

Naċ dtig leis? or naċ féidir leis?	Can he not? or is he not able?

Past Tense.

D' ḟeudas, ṫáinig liom, or do b' ḟéidir liom.	I could, or was able.

Imperfect.

D' ḟeudainn, ṫigeaḋ liom.	I used to be able.

* Literally: It comes with me. † It is possible with me.

Future.

Feuდfaდ, tiocfaიძ liom. I shall be able.

Conditional.

D' feudfainn, do tiocfadh liom.	I would be able.

The negative and the interrogative will present no difficulty.

I MUST.

644. The verb "*must*," when it means **necessity or duty**, is usually translated by the phrase ní fuláir or caithfidh. This latter is really the third person singular, future tense of caithim ; but the present and other tenses are also frequently used. It may also be very neatly rendered by the phrase, is éigean do (lit. *it is necessary for*).

Ní fuláir dom, caithfidh mé, or is eigean dom.	I must.
Ní fuláir duit, caithfidh tú, or is éigean duit.	You must.
Ní fuláir dó, caithfidh sé, or is éigean dó	He must.
&c.,	&c.

The English phrase "**have to**" usually **means** "*must*," and is translated like the above: as, ***I have** to go home now.* Caithfidh mé dul a baile anois.

The English verb "*must*," expressing duty or necessity, has no past tense of its own. The English past tense of it would be "*had to*:" as, "*I had to go away then.*" The Irish translation is as follows:—

Níor ḃ'ḟuláir ḋom, Ċaiṫ mé, or do b'éigean dom.	I had to.
Níor ḃ'ḟuláir ḋuit, Ċaiṫ tú, or do b'éigean duit.	You had to.
&c.,	&c.

The English verb "*must*" may also express a **supposition**; as in the phrase "*You must be tired.*" The simplest translation of this is "Ní fuláir go bḟuil tuirse ort," or, "Ní fuláir nó tá tuirse ort." The phrase "is cosṁail go," meaning "*It is probable that,*" may also be used: as, Is cosṁail go bḟuil tuirse ort.

The English phrase "*must have*" always expresses **supposition,** and is best translated by the above phrase followed by a verb in the past tense, as, "*You must have been hungry,*" Ní fuláir go raiḃ ocras ort. *He must have gone out,* Ní fuláir go ndeaċaiḋ sé amaċ.

Ní fuláir gur ċuaiḋ (or go ndeaġaiḋ) sé amaċ, is used in Munster.

I ESTEEM.

645. *I esteem* is translated by the phrase Tá meas agam ar. Literally, "*I have esteem on.*

I esteem John.	Tá meas agam ar Ṡeaġán.
Did you esteem him?	Raiḃ meas agat air?
He says that he greatly esteems you.	Deir sé go bḟuil meas mór aige orta.

I DIE.

646. Although there is a regular verb, eug, *die*, in Irish it is not often used; the phrase ġeiḃim bás, *I find death*, is usually employed now. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

The old man died yesterday.	Fuair an sean-ḟear bás indé.
We all die.	Ġeiḃmid uile an bás.
I shall die.	Ġeoḃad bás.
They have just died.	Táid tar éis báis d'ḟaġáil
You must die.	Caiṫfiḋ tú bás d'ḟaġáil.

I OWE.

647. There is no verb "*owe*" in Irish, Its place is supplied by saying "*There is a debt on a person.*

Tá fiaċ* orm. *I owe.*

Whenever the amount of the debt is expressed the word fiaċ is usually omitted and the sum substituted.

He owes a pound.	Tá púnt air.
You owe a shilling.	Tá sgilling ort.

* The plural of this word, fiaċa, is very frequently used in this phrase.

When the person to whom the money is due is mentioned, the construction is a little more difficult: as, *I owe you a pound*, as, Tá púnt agat orm, i.e., You have (*the claim of*) a pound on me—the words in brackets being always omitted.

He owes me a crown.	Tá coróin agam air.
Here is the man to whom you owe the money.	Seo é an fear a (go) bfuil an t-airgead aige ort.

I MEET.

648. The verb "*meet*" is usually translated by the phrase "*there is turned on*," e.g., "*I meet a man*" is translated by saying "*A man is turned on me.*" Castar fear orm (liom or dom); but the phrase buailtear (or tárla) fear órm is also used. *I met the woman*, do casadh an bean orm (liom or dom).

They met two men on the road.	Do casadh beirt fear orta ar an mbótar.
John met James.	Do casadh Seumas ar Seaġán.

Physical Sensations.

649. All physical sensations, such as **hunger, thirst, weariness, pain**, &c., are translated into Irish by saying that "*hunger, thirst*, &c., *is on a person*;" as, I

am hungry. Tá ocras orm. Literally, *hunger is on me*. He is thirsty. Tá tart air. Literally, *thirst is on him.*

The same idiom is used for emotions, such as pride, joy, sorrow, shame, &c. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

Ḃfuil ocras ort?	Are you hungry?
Ní ḟuil ocras orm anois.	I am not hungry now.
Ḃí tart mór orainn indé.	We were very thirsty yesterday.
Ḃfuil náire orta?	Are they ashamed?
Ḃí náire an tsaoġail uirri.	She was very much ashamed.
Béiḋ bród mór air.	He will be very proud.
Raiḃ tuirse ort?	Were you tired?
Ná bíoḋ eagla ort.	Don't be afraid.
Tá codlaḋ mór orm.	I am very sleepy.
Tá slaġdán ort.	You have a cold.

Whenever there is a simple adjective in Irish corresponding to the English adjective of *mental* or *physical sensation*, we have a choice of two constructions, as:—

I am cold.	Tá mé fuar	or	tá fuaċt* orm.
You are sick.	Tá tú tinn (or breoite)	,,	tá tinneas ort.
I was weary.	Ḃí mé tuirseaċ	,,	ḃí tuirse orm.

* Distinguish between slaġdán a cold (a disease) and fuaċt, the cold, coldness (of the weather) and the adjective fuar, cold.

Tá mé tinn and tá tinneas orm have not quite the same meaning, Tá mé tinn means *I feel sick*; but tá tinneas orm means *I am in some sickness, such as fever*, &c.

I CANNOT HELP.

650. The English phrase, "I cannot help that," is translated by saying *I have no help on that.* Ní ḟuil neart agam air sin. He said that he could not help it. Dubairt sé naċ raiḃ neart aige air. The word leiġeas, "*cure*," may be used instead of neart.

I AM ALONE.

651. There are two expressions which translate the English word "alone" in such sentences as I am alone, He is alone, &c., *i.e.*, Táim im aonar, or Táim liom féin (I am in my oneship, or I am by (with) myself). He is alone. Tá sé na aonar, or Tá sé leis féin. She was alone. Ḃí sí 'na h-aonar, or Ḃí sí léiṫi féin. We shall be alone. Ḃéimid 'nár n-aonar, or béimid linn féin.

I ASK.

652. The English word "*ask*" has two distinct meanings according as it means "*beseech*" or "*inquire*." In Irish there are two distinct verbs, viz.,

Iarraim, I ask (*for a favour*), and ḟiafruighim, I ask (*for information*). Before translating the word "***ask***" we must always determine what is its real meaning, and then use iarr or fiafruigh accordingly.

Ask your friend for money.	Iarr airgead ar do ċaraid.
Ask God for those graces.	Iarr ar Ḋia a ṫaḃairt duit na grásta soin.
Ask him what o'clock it is.	Fiafruigh de cad a ċlog é.
He asked us who was that at the door.	D' ḟiafruigh sé ḋínn cia'r b'é sin ag an doras.
They asked me a question.	D'ḟiafruigheadar ceist díom.

653. I DO NOT CARE.

I do not care.	Is cuma liom.
It is no affair of mine.	Is cuma dom.
Is it not equal to you?	Nać cuma duit?
It is no affair of yours.	Is cuma duit.
You don't care.	Is cuma leat.
He does not care.	Is cuma leis.
It is no affair of his.	Is cuma dó.
We did not care.	Ba ċuma linn.
It was no affair of ours.	Ba ċuma dúinn.
They did not care.	Ba ċuma leo.

(See what has been said about the prepositions le and do in the Idiom "I prefer," par. 642.)

I OUGHT.

654. "*I ought*" is translated by the phrase ıṗ cóıṗ (or ceаṗт) ꝺom. You ought, ıṗ cóıṗ ꝺuıт, ıṗ ceаṗт ꝺuıт. We ought to go home, ıṗ cóıṗ ꝺúınn ꝺul а ƀаıle. We ought to have gone home, ƀа ċóıṗ ꝺúınn ꝺul а ƀаıle. As the word "*ought*" has no inflection for the past tense in English, it is necessary to use the *past infinitive in English* to express past time. But as the Irish expression, ıṗ cóıṗ, has a past tense (ƀа ċóıṗ) the *simple verbal noun* is always used in Irish in such expressions.

Ought you not have gone to Derry with them?	Nаṗ ċóıṗ ꝺuıт ꝺul ȝo Ꝺoıṗe leo?
He ought not have gone away.	Nıoṗ ċóıṗ ꝺó ımṫeаċт.

English Dependent Phrases translated by the Verbal Noun.

655. Instead of the usual construction, consisting of a verb in a finite tense followed by its subject (a noun or a pronoun), we very frequently meet in Irish with the following construction. The English finite verb is translated by the Irish verbal noun, and the English subject is placed before the verbal noun. If the subject be a noun it is in the nominative *form*, but if a pronoun in the disjunctive *form*.

The following examples will exemplify the idiom:—

I'd prefer *that he should be* there rather than myself.	Do b'ḟearr liom é do ḃeiṫ ann ná mise.
Is it not better for us that these should not be in the boat.	Naċ fearr dúinn gan iad so do ḃeiṫ insan mbád.
I saw John when he was coming home.	Connaic mé Seaġán agus é ag teaċt a ḃaile.
I knew him *when I was a boy.*	Ḃí aiṫne agam air agus mé im ḃuaċaill.
The clock struck *just as he was coming in.*	Do ḃuail an clog agus é ag teaċt isteaċ.

APPENDICES.

Appendix I.

NOUNS OF THE FIRST DECLENSION.

abrán, a song.
aḋastar, a halter.
áḋḃar, a cause.
aḋmad, wood.
amadán, a fool.
aṁarc, a sight.
aṁras, doubt.
aoiḃneas, delight.
aoileaċ, manure.
aol, lime.
arán, bread.
ardán, hillock.
arm, an army: pl. airm, arma.
at, swelling or tumour.
áṫas, gladness.

bád, boat.
balbán, dummy.
bárr, top.
bás, death.
beagán, a little.
biaḋ, food; gen. bíḋ.
biorán, a pin.
biṫeaṁnaċ, rascal.
blas, taste.
bonn, sole, foundation.
bóṫar, road; nom. pl. bóiṫre.
bradán, a salmon.
bród, joy, pride.
bromaċ, foal or colt.
brón, sorrow.
bruaċ, brink; pl. bruaċa.
buiḋeaċas, thanks.
bun, bottom.

caiseal,* a stone fortress.
calaḋ, harbour.
carbad, chariot.
carn, heap.
casán, path.
casúr, hammer.
cat, cat.
ceann, head or end.
ceol, music; pl. ceolta.
ceudlongaḋ,† breakfast.
cineál, kind or sort.
cleaṁnas, marriage alliance.
cléireaċ, clerk
clog, bell, clock.
cogaḋ, war; pl. cogṫa or cogaiḋe.
copán, cup.
creideaṁ, faith, religion.
cuan, bay or haven; pl. cuanta.
cuġar, foam.
cúl, back of the head.

daol, beetle.
deireaḋ, end.
diaḃal, devil.
dinneur, dinner
doċar, harm.
doiċeall, grudge, reserve.
doṁan, earth, world.
donas misfortune.
doras, door; pl. doirse.
duaḋ, difficulty.
dúċċas, nature.

earball, a tail.
earraċ, Spring.
eiḋean, ivy.
eolas, knowledge.
eudaċ, cloth, clothes.

---

* This word also means a child's spinning "top."
† In spoken language breicfeasta, *m.*, is used for "*breakfast.*"

fasgaḋ, } shelter.
fosgaḋ, }
fiaċ, raven; pl. féiċ or féiġ.
focal, a word; pl. focail or focla.
foġṁar, Autumn.
fonn, tune or air.

gaḃar, goat.
gaḋar, beagle.
ganndal, gander.
garsún, a young boy.
geaṁar, green corn.
geárrcaċ, young bird.
glas, lock.
glór, voice.
gob, beak (of a bird).
greann, humour.
gual, coal.

iarann, iron.
(f)iolar, eagle.
ionad, place.
ísleán, hollow.

laoġ, calf.
lár, middle.
leaḃar, a book; pl. leaḃair, leaḃra.
leaḃrán booklet.
leaṫar, leather.
leun, misfortune.
líon, a net; pl. líonta.
lón, provision.
lorg, a track.

madaḋ or madra, a dog; pl. madraiḋe.
magaḋ, mockery, ridicule.
maor, a steward.
mart, steer or beeve.
meaṫ, failure.
milleán, blame.
mionnán, kid.
mórán, much, many.

mullaċ, top; pl. mullaiġe.

naoṁ, a saint.
neart, strength.
ocras, hunger.
ór, gold.

págánaċ, a pagan.
páipeur, paper.
píobán, windpipe or neck.
port, tune or air.
preuċán, crow.

rian, track; gen. riain.
ród, road.
rún, secret.

sac, a sack.
sagart, a priest.
sagas, kind or sort.
salann, salt.
samraḋ, summer
saoġal, life, world.
saor, craftsman. artisan.
saoṫar, exertion, work.
seaḃac, hawk.
seod, a precious thing, jewel; pl. seoda.
sgeul, news; pl. sgeula; sgeulta, stories.
slabraḋ, chain; pl. slabraiḋe.
sop, wisp.
sórt, } kind or sort
sórd, }
spiorad, a spirit.
spor, a spur.
spórt, sport.
stór, treasure store.
suaimneas, repose.

tamall, a short space of time.
taoiseaċ, a captain, a leader.
teallaċ, hearth.
trosgán, furniture.
tús, beginning

Appendix II.

A list of feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant, belonging to the Second Declension.

Nom.	Gen.	Meaning.
aḋarc	aḋairce	a horn
bábóg	bábóige	a doll
báisdeaċ	báisdiġe	rain
barraċ	barraiġe	tow
beaċ	beiċe	bee
beann	beinne	a mountain peak
bearaċ	bearaiġe	a heifer
bláṫaċ	bláiṫċe or bláṫaiġe	buttermilk
bos	boise	palm (of the hand)
breaṫ	breiṫe	judgment
breug	bréige	a lie
briaṫar	bréiṫre	word of honour
bróg	bróige	a shoe
bruiġean	bruiġne	palace, fort
buiḋean	buiḋne	a troop
cailleaċ	cailliġe	an old woman
cealg	ceilge	deceit.
cearc	circe	hen
ceard	ceirde	a trade
ciall	céille	sense
cian	céine (pl. cianta)	distance
ciaróg	ciaróige	beetle
cíor	círe	a comb
cláirseaċ	cláirsiġe	a harp
clann	cloinne or clainne	children
cloċ	cloiċe	a stone
cluas	cluaise	an ear
clúṁ	clúiṁe	plumage
cneaḋ	cneiḋe	a wound
colpaċ	colpaiġe	a heifer
cos	coise	a foot
craoḃ	craoiḃe	a branch
craoiseaċ	craoisiġe	a spear
creaċ	creiċe	plunder
creag	creige	crag
críoċ	críċe	end
croċ	croiċe	gibbet
cros	croise	cross
cuaċ	cuaiċe	cuckoo
cuileog	cuileoige	a fly

Nom.	Gen.	Meaning.
daḃaċ	daiḃċe	a vat
dealḃ	deilḃe	a form
dealg	deilge	a thorn
deoċ	diġe	a drink
díon	díne	protection
doineann	doininne	bad weather
dreaċ	dreiċe	face, visage
easóg	easóige	a weasel
feaċt	feiċte	time, occasion
fearg	feirge	anger
feusóg	feusóige	beard
fiṫċeall	fiṫċille	chess
fleaḋ	fleiḋe	a feast
fleasg	fleisge	wreath
freuṁ	fréiṁe	a root
fuinneog	fuinneoige	window
fuinnseog	fuinnseoige	an ash
fuiseog	fuiseoige	a lark
gaḃlóg	gaḃlóige	a little fork
gaoṫ	gaoiṫe	wind
gealaċ	gealaiġe	moon
geug	géige	branch
gíog	gíge	squeak
geirrseaċ	geirrsiġe	girl
giorrsaċ	giorrsaiġe	girl
glún	glúine	knee
grian	gréine	sun
gruag	gruaige	hair
iall	éille	thong
inġean	inġine	daughter
láṁ	láiṁe	hand
lasóg	lasóige	match (light)
laṫaċ	laiṫċe	mud, mire
leac	leice	a stone flag
leaṫ	leiṫe	half, side
long	luinge	ship
lúb	lúibe	loop
luċ	luiċe	mouse
meur	méire	finger
muc	muice	pig
neaṁ	neiṁe	heaven

Nom.	Gen.	Meaning.
óinseaċ	óinsiġe	fool (f.)
ordóg	ordóige	thumb
piast	péiste	reptile
piastóg	piastóige	worm
píob	píbe	musical pipe
pluc	pluice	cheek
póg	póige	kiss
riar	réire	order, regulation
sál	sáile	heel
sealg	seilge	hunt
searc	seirce	love
seisreaċ	seisriġe	plough
sgeaċ	sgeiċe	hawthorn bush
sgian	sgine	knife
sgiaṁ	sgéiṁe	comeliness
sgiaṫ	sgéiṫe	shield
sgórnaċ	sgórnaiġe	throat
sgríob	sgríbe	scrape
síon	síne	weather
slat	slaite	rod
soineann	soininne	fine weather
speal	speile	scythe
splanc	splaince	spark, thunderbolt.
srón	sróine	nose
taoḃ	taoiḃe	side
teud	téide	string
tonn	tuinne	wave
treaḃ	treiḃe	tribe
uḃ	uiḃe	an egg

Appendix III.

NOUNS BELONGING TO THE THIRD DECLENSION.

(*a*) All personal nouns ending in óir, úir,
(*b*) All abstract nouns ending in aċt.
(*c*) Verbal nouns in aċt, áil, and aṁain.
(*d*) The following list:—

Nom.	Genitive.	Meaning
aċt	aċta	decree
ainm	anma	name

Nom.	Genitive.	Meaning.
aisíoc	aisiġċe, aiseaġċa	repayment, restitution
altóir	altóra	altar
anál	anála	breath
anam	anma	soul
Aoḋ	Aoḋa	Hugh
aos	aosa	folk, people
áṫ	áṫa	ford
beannaċt	beannaċta	blessing
bain-ríoġan	bain-ríoġna	queen
bior	beara	a (cooking) spit
biṫ (bioṫ)	beaṫa	life
blaṫ	blaṫa	blossom
bliaḋain	bliaḋna	a year
blioċt	bleaċta	butter-milk
boṫ	boṫa	tent, cot
bruġ	broġa	palace, mansion
buaċaill	buaċalla	boy
buaiḋ	buaḋa	victory
buaiḋirt	buaiḋearta	trouble.
cabair	cabra	help
cáin	cána	tax
Cáisg	Cásga	Easter
caṫ	caṫa	battle
cion	ceana	love, desire, affection
cíos	cíosa	rent
ciṫ, *m.* (cioṫ)	ceaṫa	shower
cleas	cleasa	a trick
cliaṁain, *m.*	cliaṁna	son-in-law
cnáṁ	cnáṁa	bone
codlaḋ	codalta	sleep
cóir	córa	justice
connraḋ	connarta	compact, covenant
cosnaṁ	cosanta	defence
cráḋ	cráḋa	torture, destruction
crios	creasa	belt
cruṫ	croṫa	form
cuairt	cuarta (or cuairte)	visit
cuid	coda	part, share
dáil	dála	account
dán	dána	destiny
daṫ	daṫa	colour
deanaṁ	deanṁa	make or shape
Diarmuid	Diarmuda	Dermot
doċtúir	doċtúra	doctor
drúiċt	droċta	dew
druim, *m.*	droma	a back

Nom.	Genitive.	Meaning.
éarc	éarca	tax, tribute
eud	euda	jealousy
euloḋ	euloḋa	escape, elopement
fáṫ	fáṫa	cause, reason
feart	fearta	a grave, tomb
fearṫainn	fearṫanna	rain
feiḋm	feaḋma	service, use
feoil	feola	flesh, meat
fiacail	fiacla	a tooth
fíon	fíona	wine
fios	feasa	knowledge
flaiṫ	flaṫa	prince
foġ	foġa	plunder
foġluim	foġlumṫa	learning
fógraḋ	fógarṫa	decree
fuagraḋ	fuagarṫa	announcement
fuaċt, *m.*	fuaċta	cold
fuasglaḋ	fuasgluiġṫe	ransom, redemption
fuaṫ	fuaṫa	hatred
fuil	fola	blood
gleann	gleanna	valley
gníoṁ	gníoṁa	act, deed
goin	gona	wound
gráḋ	gráḋa	love
greim, *m.*	greama	a piece
gruṫ	groṫa	curds
gul	gola	weeping
guṫ	goṫa	a voice
iarraiḋ	iarraḋa	a desire, request
iaṫ	iaṫa	land, country
iomáin	iomána	hurling (a game)
iomráḋ	iomráiḋte	report, notice
leabaḋ, *f.*	leabṫa	a bed
leaċt	leaċta	a grave
lionn	leanna	beer, ale
lios	leasa	a fort
loċ	loċa	lake
loċt	loċta	reproach
lus	losa	an herb
maiḋm	maḋma	defeat, rout
maiṫeaṁ	maiṫte	forgiveness
meas	measa	esteem

Nom.	Genitive.	Meaning.
mian	miana	desire
mil	meala	honey
moḋ	moḋa	manner
móin	móna	bog
muir	mara	sea
óg	óga	a young person
olann	olna	wool
ollaṁain	ollaṁna	instruction
onóir	onóra	honour
osglaḋ	osgailte	admission, opening
raṫ	raṫa	luck
reaċt, *m.*	reaċta	law
rioċt	reaċta	a form
riṫ	reaṫa	running
saṁail	saṁla	an equal, like
Saṁain	Saṁna	November
sgáṫ	sgáṫa	shadow
sgoṫ	sgoṫa	flower
seal	seala	a space of time
sioc	seaca	frost
síoṫċáin	síoṫċána	peace
slioċt	sleaċta	posterity
smaċt, *m.*	smaċta	a curb
snáṁ	snáṁa	a swim
soġ	soġa	pleasure
sraiṫ	sraṫa	a layer
srón	sróna	nose
sruṫ	sroṫa	steam
táilliúir	táilliúra	tailor
táin	tána	a drove
tionsgaṁ	tionsganta	purpose, project
toil	tola	a will
tráiġ	tráġa	a strand
tréad	tréada	flock, drove
treoir	treora	guide, troop
treus	treusa	battle
troid	troda	fight, quarrel
Tuaim	Tuama	Tuam
tuaṫ	tuaṫa	tribe
uaiṁ	uaṁa	cave
uċt	oċta	breast

Appendix IV.

THE NOUNS OF THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

The letters in brackets give the termination of the genitive singular.

aḃ or aḃa, gen. aḃann, **a** river; pl. aiḃne or aiḃneaċa.
aonta(-ḋ), license, permission.
Ara(-n), Isle of Arran; pl. Airne, The Arran Isles.
ara(-n), kidney.

beoir (beoraċ), beer.
braġa(ḋ), *m.*, the upper part of the breast.
breiṫeaṁ(an), *m.*, a judge.
ḃro(-n), **a** quern, handmill pl. brointe.

caora(ċ), **a** sheep; pl. caoiriġ.
cara(d), **a** friend; pl. cáirde.
caṫair(-ṫraċ), **a** city, fortress.
caṫaoir(-reaċ), a chair.
ceardċa(-n), a forge, smithy.
ceaṫraṁa(-n), a quarter.
clais(-saċ), a furrow.
coisir(-sreaċ), a feast.
comursa(-n), neighbour; pl. comursain.
comla(-ċ), a gate, door.
comra(-n), a coffer, cupboard, coffin.
coróin(-naċ), a crown.
cráin(-naċ), a sow.
cu, gen. con, a hound; pl. coin, cona, hounds.
cúil(-aċ), a corner.
cuisle(-ann), a pulse, vein.

dáileaṁ(-an), a cup-bearer.
dair(-aċ), an oak.
dearna(-n), palm of the hand.
díle(-ann), flood, deluge; pl. díleanna, díleanaċa

ealaḋa(-n), science, learning.
easaonta(-ḋ), disagreement, disobedience.
eascu (compound of cu), an eel.
eisir(-sreaċ), an oyster.
eoċair (eoċraċ), **a** key.
eorna(-n) [or gen. same as **nom.**], barley.

fealsaṁ(-an), *m.*, philosopher.
feiċeaṁ(an), *m.*, debtor.
Feoir(-aċ), The Nore.
fioġair(aċ), a sign, mark.
fiċe(ad), twenty.
foġail(ġlaċ), plunder.

gaḃa(-n), *m.*, a smith: pl. gaiḃne
gráin (gránaċ), hatred.
guala(-n), a shoulder; pl. guailne, guailleaċa.

ionga(-n), a nail (of the finger); pl. ingne.

laċa(-n), a duck.
láir (láraċ), a mare.
lánaṁa(-n), a married couple.
lasair (lasraċ), a flame.
láṫair (láṫraċ), a level plain.
leaca(-n), *m.*, a cheek; pl. leacaineaċa.
lurga(-n), the skin; pl. luirgne.

mainistir(-treaċ), a monastery.
meanma(-n), the mind.
míle(-aḋ), a soldier, warrior.

náṁa(-d), an enemy; pl. náiṁde.
Nodlaig (Nodlag), Christmas.

ollaṁ(-an), a doctor, professor.

pearsa(-n), a person.

riaġail (riaġlaċ), a rule.
roġa(-n), a choice; pl. roġnaċa, roġaineaċa.

sáil (sálaċ), a beam.
seanga(-n), a cormorant.
stáil (stálaċ), a stallion.

tál(-aċ), a wedge.
talaṁ, gen. talṁan, land.
Teaṁair (Teaṁraċ) Tara.
teanga(-n or ḋ), tongue; pl. teangṫa.
teorna(-n), boundary, limit.

uille(-ann), an elbow.
ulċa(-n), a beard.
ursa(-n), a door-jamb.

Appendix V

A LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBAL NOUNS.

Verb.	Meaning.	Verbal Noun
abair	say	**rád**
admuiġ	confess	**admáil**
bain	snatch, take*	**baint**
beir	bear, carry	**breiṫ**
bliġ	milk	**bliġan**
bruiṫ	cook	**bruiṫ**
buain	reap, cut (grass, &c.)	**buaint**
caill	lose	**cailleaṁain**
caiṫ	throw, open, consume	**caiṫeaṁ, caiṫeaḋ**
ceannuiġ	buy	**ceannaċ**
ceil	conceal	**ceilt**
céim	step	**céim**
cinn	determine	**cinneaṁain**
claoiḋ	defeat	**claoi**
coimeud	watch, guard	**coimeud**
coisriġ	bless	**{coisreagan {coisreagaḋ**
coisg	prevent	**cosg**
comraiċ	fight	**comraċ**
cogair	whisper	**cogar**
congaiḃ	keep	**congḃáil**
corruiġ	stir, move	**corruiġe**
cosain	defend	**cosnaṁ, cosaint**
creid	believe	**creideaṁaint**
cuir	put, send	**cur**
dearmad	forget	**dearmad**
díol	sell	**díol**
druid	shut	**druidim**
dúisiġ	awake	**dúiseaċt, dúsgaḋ**
éag	die	**éag**
éiliġ	claim	**éileaṁ, éiliuġaḋ**
éiriġ	rise, arise	**éiriġe**
éist	listen	**éisteaċt**
faġ	find, get	**faġáil**
fág	leave	**fágáil**
fan	wait	**fanaṁaint**

* To *take* a thing *not offered* is "bain;" but when *offered*, "**glac.**"

Verb.	Meaning.	Verbal Noun.
fás	grow	fás
fead	whistle	feadġail
fear	pour out, shower	fearṫain
feic	see	feicsint
feuċ	behold, look	feuċaint
fiafruiġ	ask, enquire	fiafruiġe
foġluim	learn	foġluim
foill	suit, fit	foilleaṁaint
fóir	help, succour	fóiriṫin
freastail	attend, serve	freastal
fuaiġ	sew	fuaġail
fuagair (fógair)	announce, proclaim	fuagairt, fuagra / fógra
fulaing	suffer	fulang
gaḃ	take, go	gaḃáil
gáir	call	gáirm
geall	promise	geallaṁain
géim	bellow, low	géimneaċ or géime.
glaoiḋ	call	glaoḋaċ
gluais	journey, go	gluasaċt
goil	weep	gol
guiḋ	pray	guiḋe
iarr	try, ask, entreat	iarraiḋ
imreas	contend, wrestle	imreasgáil
imṫiġ	go away	imṫeaċt
innis	tell	innsint
iomċair	carry	iomċar
iompuiġ	turn	iompóḋ
íoc	pay	íoc
ional	wash	ionlat
ionnsuiġ	approach	ionnsuiġe
iṫ	eat	iṫe
leag	knock down	leagan
lean	follow	leanaṁaint
léig	let, allow	léigean
ling	leap	ling
lomair	strip, pull off	lomairt, lomnaḋ
luiġ	lie (down)	luiġe
mair	live, exist	maireaċtain / marṫain
maiṫ	forgive	maiṫeaṁ
meas	think	meas

Verb	Meaning.	Verbal Noun.
oil	nourish	oileaṁaint
ól	drink*	ól
reic	sell	reic
réiḋtiġ	arrange	réiḋteaċ
rinnc	dance	rinnce
riṫ	run	riṫ
roinn	divide	roinnt
saoil	think	saoilsin
seas	stand	seasaṁ
seinn	play (an instrument)	seinnm
sgar	separate	sgaraṁaint
sgrios	destroy, erase	sgrios
sguir	cease	sgur
siuḃal	walk	siuḃal
slad	slay	slad
snáṁ	swim	snáṁ
stad	stop	stad
suiḋ	sit	suiḋe
tabair	give	tabairt
tairg	offer	tairgsin
tarraing	draw	tarraing
teagasg	teach, instruct	teagasg
teilg	fling	teilgean
toċrais	wind	toċras
tóg	lift	tógáil
tóiriġ	search for, pursue	tóiriġeaċt
tréig	forsaken, abandon	tréigean
tuig	understand	tuigsint
tuill	earn, deserve	tuilleaṁ / tuilleaṁain
tuirling	alight, descend	tuirling

Appendix VI.

A LIST OF VERBS BELONGING TO FIRST CONJUGATION.

bac, stop, hinder, meddle.
bain, snatch, take.
báiṫ, drown.
béic, bawl.
bog, soften.
bliġ, milk.
bris, break.
brúiġ, bruise.
buail, beat.
buaiḋ, give success.

---

* Drunk, meaning intoxicated, is not ólta, but "ar meisge."

caill, lose.
caoin, lament.
caiṫ, waste, spend, eat or cast.
cam, bend, make crooked.
can, sing.
caoċ, blind.
car, twist, turn, wind, wry.
ceap, think.
cead, allow, leave, permit.
ceil, hide, conceal.
cinn, resolve.
cíor, comb.
claoiḋ, defeat.
claon, bend, crook.
coirg, stop, hinder.
craiṫ, shake.
croċ, hang.
creid, believe, trust.
criṫ, tremble, quake.
crom, bend stoop,.
crom ar, set about.
cum, form, shape.
cuir, put, send.
cuir ar bun, establish.
cuir caoi air, mind.

daor, condemn, blame.
dearḃ, ascertain, assure.
dearc, look, observe, remark.
dearmad, forget.
ding, press, stuff, push.
díol, sell.
dóiġ, burn, consume.
dóirt, spill, shed.
druid, shut, enclose.
dual, plait, fold.
dún, close

éist, listen.

fair, watch, guard.
fáisg, squeeze, crush.
fan, stay, wait, stop.
fás, grow.
fead, whistle.
feall, deceive, cheat.
feann, flay, strip.
fear, pour out, shower.
feuċ, behold, look.

fill, return, come back.
feudaim. I can.
fliuċ, wet, moisten, drench.
foill, suit, fit.
fóir, help, relieve, succour.
foġluim, learn.

gáir, shout, call.
geall, promise.
gearr, cut.
géill, obey, submit.
glac, take, reserve.
glan, cleanse.
glaoiḋ, call.
gluais, journey, travel, go.
goid, steal
goil, weep, lament.
goin, wound.
grais, sign, mark.
guiḋ, pray.

iarr, ask, seek, request, beseech.
íoc, pray, atone.
iṫ, eat

las, light, kindle, blaze.
leag, throw down.
lean, follow, pursue.
léiġ, read.
léig, grant, suffer, permit.
léim, leap.
ling, leap, bounce, start.
líon, fell, surfeit, cram.
loisg, singe, scorch, burn.
lúb, bend, crook.
luiġ, lie.

mair, last, exist, remain.
marḃ, kill, murder.
maiṫ, forgive.
maoiṫ, wet, steep.
meall, deceive, defraud.
meas, estimate, think.
meaṫ, fade, wither.
mill, spoil, destroy.
mol, praise.
múin, teach, instruct.

nasg, tie, join.
niġ, wash.

oil, nurse, cherish.
oir, suit, fit.
ól, drink.

pléasg, crack.
póg, kiss.
poll, pierce, penetrate.
preab, spring, leap.

reic, sell.
reub, tear, burst.
riṫ. run, flee.
roinn, divide.
ruaig, pursue, rout.

sáiṫ, thrust, stab.
saoil, síl, reflect, think.
saor, deliver.
sgaoil, loose, let go.
sguir, cease, desist.
seas, stand.
séid, blow.

seol, teach, drive, sail.
seinn, play (music).
sgar, separate, divide.
sgríoḃ, write.
sgrios, sweep, scrape, destroy.
sil, drop, let fall, sink.
sín, stretch, extend.
sméid, beckon, wink.
sluig, swallow.
snáṁ, swim, float.
stad, stop.
stad de, desist.
suiḋ, sit.

tairg, offer.
taċt, choke.
teiṫ. fly.
tóġ, choose, select.
tóg, take up, lift.
treaḃ, plough, till.
tréig, forsake, abandon.
troid, fight, quarrel.
tuig, understand.
tuill, earn, deserve.
tuit, fall.

Appendix VII.

LIST OF SYNCOPATED VERBS.

agair, entreat.
aitin, recognize.

bagair, threaten.

casgair, slaughter.
ceangail, bind.
cigil, tickle.
coigil, spare.
codail, sleep.
cosain, defend.
cuimil, rub.

díbir, banish.

eitil, fly.

fóġain, serve.
freagair, answer.
freasdail, attend, serve.
(f)osgail, open.
fuagair, proclaim.
fulaing, suffer.
fursgail, relieve.

innis, tell.
ingil, graze.
imir, play.
iomċair, carry.
íoḋbair, offer.

labair, speak.
lomair, strip, bare.

múscail, awaken.

saltair, trample.
seaċain, avoid.

tomail, consume, eat.
toċail, dig, root.
tarraing, draw.
teastail, want, require.
tionóil, gather.
toċrais, wend.
tuirling, descend.

Ar n-a ċur i gcló
d' Ua Caṫail agus d'á ḃuiḋean,
35, 36 agus 37 Sráid ṁór an Tráġa,
Baile-aṫa-Cliaṫ.